Humanology 1: Politics, Physics, and Metaphysics

Huhnkie Lee

Table of Content

Table of Content ……………………………………………………………………………1

Introduction……………………………………………………………………………………1

Voter's Equation………………………………………………………………………………2

Inertial Symmetry Axiom Theory…………………………………………………………..54

Force Echelon Axiom Theory………………………………………………………………93

Metaphysics and Physics: the Parallel Universes of Philosophy and Science..……………145

Ideological Analysis……………………………………………………………………...197

Introduction

This book is a collection of five academic research papers written by the aforementioned author in Alaska between August 2020 and December 2020.

Voter's Equation[1]

Huhnkie Lee[2]

An equation that mathematically models voters' process of choosing a candidate is introduced. The result is given upfront. Then mathematical preliminary is provided. Then the equation is explained step by step. Finally, the equation is applied to a real-world example of an election that the author had the honor of participating as a candidate in a local election in Alaska.

Prologue

Hello everyone, thank you for your kind and generous readership //:-D This is an academic article, but I will keep it as entertaining as possible. Please enjoy-

I. The Equation

Let us take a look at what Voter's Equation looks like:

$$\mathrm{V}(x, \mathrm{C}) = argmax(\mathrm{F}, \mathrm{C}), \ \ where$$

$$\mathrm{F}(\mathrm{I}, x, c) = \frac{\mathbf{O}(\mathrm{I}, x) \cdot \mathbf{O}(\mathrm{I}, x, c)}{D(x, c)},$$

And V is Voter's choice function; x is a voter variable; C is a set of candidates; F is Feelings Function; O is Opinion Vector function; I is a set of issues; c is a candidate; and D is Distance function.

---

[1] This paper is dedicated to the 110 voters in Alaska, who kindly voted for the author when he ran for Alaska State Senate District D Republican Primary in Greater Wasilla Area on 8/18/2020. The same paper is also dedicated to the author's kind and generous friends and family members who supported his campaign ambition from the distance, all around the world //:-) For the election result, please see https://en.wikipedia.org/wiki/2020_Alaska_Senate_election .

[2] A lawyer by trade, a mathematician by hobby, a U.S. Army veteran by record, a former computer programmer, a prior PhD candidate in computational biology, a former actor/writer/director/indie-filmmaker/background-music-composer.

II. Mathematical Preliminaries

1. Ordered Set and Unordered Set[3]

A set is a collection of things. Traditionally, a set is enclosed in a curly bracket, like:

Boys = {Tom, Dick, Henry}.

A set, by default, is unordered. The three boys in the set above are friends with equal footing. But let's say, the three boys grew up to be three men and they ran for a local election. After the election result came out, now there is the ordering: 1st place, 2nd place, and 3rd place. This is the concept of an ordered set.

Traditionally, an ordered set is expressed as a paired parenthesis like so:

Winners = (Dick, Tom, Henry).

For instance, let's say Dick is the 1st winner, Tom the second, Henry the third, in an election.

In the previous unordered set, a set membership is expressed as:

Henry ∊ Boys

The "∊" is a set membership operator and the above mathematical sentence can be translated into English language of "Henry belongs to Boys set" or "Henry is a member of the Boys club" or "Henry is one of those boys in town."

Now, in the abstract, in general, we can have a set variable X, and a member variable x. Then,

$x \in X$

---

[3] See https://en.wikipedia.org/wiki/Set_theory .

In the previous example, Henry was a member constant and Boys was a set constant.[4] In our Voter's equation, c is a candidate variable and C is a candidate set variable where,

$c \in C$

That is, c is a candidate who belongs to a set of candidates C who are running for the same seat in a same election, competing with one another.

2. Scalar and Vector

In mathematics, a scalar is a finite real number that can be negative, zero, or positive, like

-3.5, 0, or +7. A vector is an ordered set of scalars, like (5, -2, 0). The dimension of a vector means the number of elements in a vector. For instance, (2, 3) is a two-dimensional vector. In Cartesian geometry, a vector corresponds to a dot in the space, or an arrow that connects the point of origin and that dot in the space.[5]

3. Function

In math, a function is like a machinery that takes a set of inputs and gives out a set of

outputs. For example,

$$f(x, y, z) = x * (y + z)$$

The function above is a scalar function, because its output is a scalar. If a function's output is a vector, such function is called a vector function. For instance,

$$f(x, y, z) = (x+y, x*y, z)$$

Traditionally, a vector is denoted with a bold font. A variable is typically typed in a low-case letter with italic font.

In math, the type of a function depends on the function's output. As we will see later on, if a function's output is a set, then we call such function, a set function.

---

[4] See https://www.differencebetween.com/difference-between-variable-and-vs-constant .

[5] See https://mathinsight.org/vectors_cartesian_coordinates_2d_3d .

4. Inverse Function[6]

Simply put, an inverse function is the inverse of a function. The tautological English expression doesn't quite help, so we shall illustrate by an example. Say,

$$f(x) = x + 10$$

Then, f's inverse function, conventionally denoted as f^{-1}, is:

$$f^{-1}(x) = x - 10$$

The concept is simple. Say,

$$f(2) = 2 + 10 = 12$$

Then, we are asking this question: what kind of input value x would give out the output value 12 in function f? A function that would answer that question is the inverse of f, denoted as f^{-1}, like so:

$$f^{-1}(12) = 12 – 10 = 2$$

Summarily put, the concept of inverse functions is a generalization of the concept of inverse operators, like, - to +, or ÷ to ×.

5. Dot Product[7]

A dot product of two vectors are easy to calculate. For example, say, we have two three-dimensional vectors:

$$\mathbf{a} = (-2, 5, 3)$$

$$\mathbf{b} = (10, 1, 2)$$

---

[6] See https://en.wikipedia.org/wiki/Inverse_function .

[7] See https://en.wikipedia.org/wiki/Dot_product . It is also known as inner product.

Then,

$$\mathbf{a} \cdot \mathbf{b} = -2*10 + 5*1 + 3*2 = -20 + 5 + 6 = -9$$

In English, a dot product of two vectors is defined as a summation of products of each corresponding element in the two vectors.

6. The *argmax* Function[8]

In math, an "argument" means an input to a function. An argmax of a function is an argument that maximizes the function. That is, an argmax is an input that maximizes the output of the function. For example, say, you have a function:

$$f(x) = -(x-2)^2$$

Then,

$$\mathit{argmax}(f) = 2.$$

It is because the function f is maximized when its input is 2.

Let us fast forward a bit. Say, a voter evaluates three candidates: Tom, Dick, and Henry. We will call that voter's evaluation function, a Feelings function, which will be explored in detail later. If the voter feels that Henry is 9, Dick is 5, Tom a 7, then the voter will vote for Henry.

Here, the Feelings function takes two inputs: a voter variable X and a set of candidates C, which in this example is composed of three candidates. To mathematically summarize, we have:

$$F(X, \text{Tom}) = 7,$$

$$F(X, \text{Dick}) = 5,$$

$$F(X, \text{Henry}) = 9.$$

---

[8] See https://en.wikipedia.org/wiki/Arg_max .

Then, the argmax of our Feelings function for the voter X is Henry, because it is the one Henry that the voter X feels the best about the candidacy in this hypothetical election season.

We can compactly express such concept in a mathematical language like so:

$$\mathit{argmax}(F, X) = \text{Henry}.$$

Mathematically speaking,

$$\mathit{argmax}(f, X) = f^{-1}(\ \mathrm{Max}\{\ f(X)\ \}\ )$$

“Max{}” is a function that takes in a set as input, and gives out as an output, an element of the input set, which has the maximum value amongst all the elements in the input set. For instance,

$$\mathrm{Max}\{-10, 100, 5\} = 100$$

And, f(X) is a set function, whose output is a set, whose elements are the outputs of function f, when the function f is applied to the individual members of the input set X. For instance,

$$X = \{1, 10, 100\},$$

$$f(x) = 2x$$

Then,

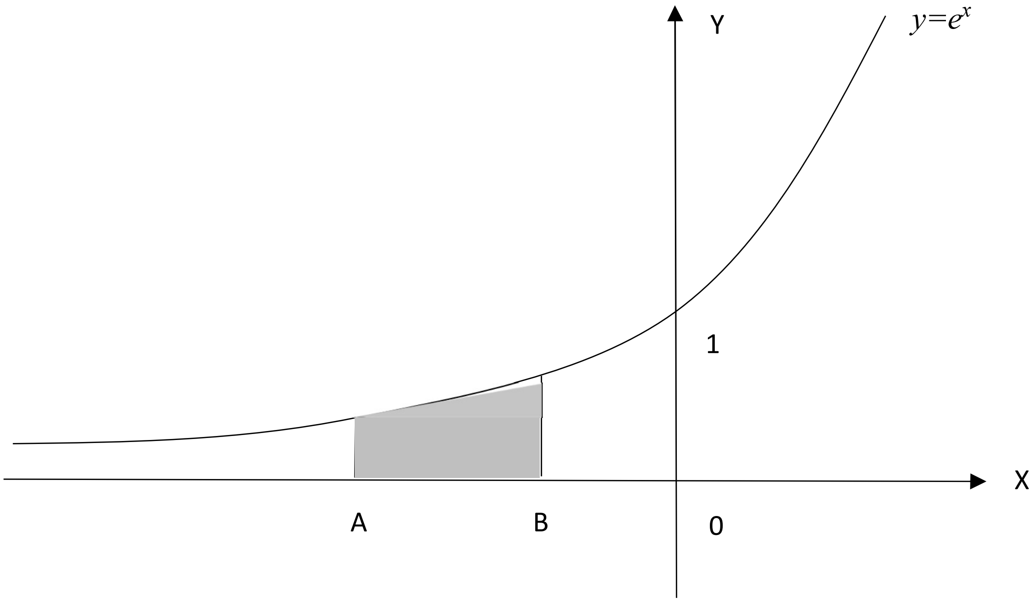
$$f(X) = 2 \times \{1, 10, 100\} = \{2, 20, 200\}$$

If the author hasn’t been a good lecturer of mathematics, please forgive him //:-) But fortunately, if our dear readers want to know more about mathematics covered here, there are math teachers in free websites like YouTube or Wikipedia or Khan’s Academy or other fantastic educational websites that will show up in search engines like Bing or Google or Yahoo.

7. Exponential Function and Integration

In science, “e”, a letter in lower case means Euler’s number.[9] An exponential function, e^x, is a very popular one in science, because when you differentiate it in calculus, you get the same thing. That is, the derivative of e^x is e^x itself.[10]

In the two-dimensional Cartesian X-Y coordinate system, the graph of $y=e^x$ looks like:



Now, an integration of a function is a vertically shadowed area between the curve and the X-axis.[11] The shaded area above can be mathematically expressed as:

$$Area = \int_{A}^{B} e^x \, dx$$

8. Newton’s Equation

Sir Isaac Newton’s equation of gravitational energy is:[12]

$$\mathrm{E} = \mathrm{G}\frac{m \cdot M}{r}$$

There is a similarity between the equation above and our Feelings equation. Such is not a coincidence but is by design.

---

[9] See https://en.wikipedia.org/wiki/E_(mathematical_constant) .

[10] See https://www.onlinemathlearning.com/exponential-derivative.html .

[11] See https://www.intmath.com/applications-integration/2-area-under-curve.php .

[12] See https://en.wikipedia.org/wiki/Gravitational_energy .

III. Memory Time and Relational Distance

1. Relationship between Space and Time

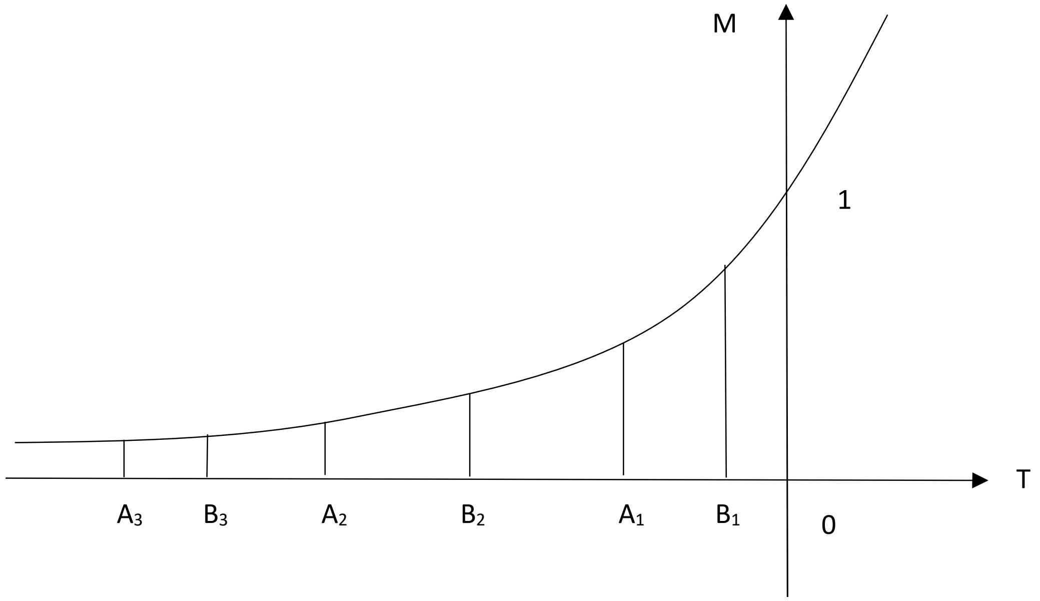
What if the author proposes to readers the following equation, when *d* means distance, and *t* means time:

$$D = \frac{1}{T}$$

We will examine the equation of space and time above in this chapter.[13]

2. Memory Time

Let us assume that Adam is a suitor for Eve. Adam thinks about Eve all the time as he fell in love with the lady. Let us count how much time Adam has spent thinking about her:



The horizontal axis is the time axis. The time "0" means now, today. Then, the points along the T-axis located left of the point 0 represents the time in the past. The points to the right of 0 means the time in the future.

---

[13] The author privately proved that Mr. Albert Einstein's special and general relativity theories are wrong. He will write an article about the disproof and submit to a physics journal in the near future. However, Mr. Einstein did contribute to physics and philosophy in that he popularized the idea of inter-relationship between time and space.

Let's say, Adam thought about Eve a day ago, for an hour, from 7pm to 8pm. A_1 above denotes 7pm last night, and B_1 denotes 8pm last night. Similarly, A_2 means the beginning time and B_2 between which Adam was thinking about Eve. Lastly, A_3 and B_3 are the third set of beginning and ending times of Adam's thinking of Eve.

The vertical axis signifies memory level. We used exponential function, $y=e^x$, in order to mathematically model the concept of memory lapse in time. That is, the farther in the past an event is, the less clearly we remember it.

Then, the total amount of memory time, T, which Adam spent thinking about Eve is:

$$T = \sum_{i=1}^{3} \int_{A_i}^{B_i} e^x \, dt = \int_{A_1}^{B_1} e^x \, dt + \int_{A_2}^{B_2} e^x \, dt + \int_{A_3}^{B_3} e^x \, dt$$

3. Memory Time Concept in Detail

So, the concept of memory time, as we have noticed, is more than a simple summation of time that Adam spent thinking about Eve. Let's assume that Eve is an ex-girlfriend of Adam that he dated 10 years ago. Then, due to the memory lapse, the memory time has been diminished. But if Eve is a present girlfriend of Adam, then the memory time is amplified, because the memory is fresh. This is why we needed to introduce the multiplying factor function, $y=e^x$, no pun intended of course.

Also, the memory time signifies more that the time that Adam is thinking about Eve. It captures the time that the visual, conceptual, auditory, olfactory images that register in Adam's psyche. Meaning, the memory time represents the time when Adam texts to Eve, listens to Eve when on the phone, or sees her in person, or writes a love poem for her, buys a bouquet of flowers for her. In this sense, memory time can be alternatively termed as 'perception time.'

In a computer, there is an electronic RAM (random access memory), and a magnetic hard disk. Likewise, in Adam's brain, there is a short-term memory brain area, and there is a long-term memory brain area. Memory time roughly corresponds to the summation of the time that Eve's image resides in Adam's short-term memory space. But of course, we factor in the memory loss concept by multiplying $y=e^x$ to those time periods.

4. Relational Distance

We spent enough time talking about memory time. Now let us turn our attention to the concept of space instead. This is a paper about political science, not physical science. So we will refrain from going into details of space and time concept in physics and mathematics. Here, we will do our best to be down to earth, so to speak. But we still need to use mathematical language here, in order to be mathematically precise in our modeling of a political phenomenon, the voting behavior.

One question to ask our dear readers. How would you characterize the distance between two people? Let us think about this for a minute or two.

…

…

…

Say, what does it mean when we say, "I am very close to her." Or "She and I, back in the days, we fell farther apart from one another. But lately, we got back together again. So we are close to each other again."

The one all-American band, *The Carpenters,* once sang back in the days:

Why do birds suddenly appear
Every time you are near?
Just like me, they long to be
Close to you

The song was sung by a female vocalist, but I commonsensically suspect that a man wrote the lyrics, thinking about the woman that he loves. If the love is mutual, then the man and the woman would get together, get married, as the story goes.

5. Asymmetricity of Relational Distance

But what if Adam loves Eve but she doesn't? Then it's the unrequited infatuation in

Adam's part, like, one-sided love. Adam thinks about Eve all the time, but Eve does not. Adam chases Eve, but Eve runs farther and farther away. Does this sound familiar to our dear readers, the political scientists? Do not we all know that there is a definite similarity between a romantic courtship behavior of Adam, and the election effort of Adam the Candidate towards his constituent voters?

Say, it is a boyish fantasy that Adam has about Eve, when Eve has absolutely no romantic interest in this one man, Adam. In this situation, Adam thinks about Eve all the time but Eve does not. Adam feels Eve is very close and dear to him, but to Eve, Adam is someone that she would stay as far away as possible, because he is bothersome, burdensome. She does not want him, period.

This is why relational distance concept is asymmetric. The distance from Adam to Eve, is very, very different from the distance from Eve to Adam. The former is a close one, the latter is a far, far, and far away one. Such is an age-old theme of a love story.

6. Relational Distance Defined

We took a little break from all these, so aptly dubbed, mathematical mumbo-jumbos.

Now, let's get back at it, as we need it.

$$D = \frac{1}{T}$$

D means our relational distance, and *T* means our memory time. The author shall give our beloved political scientist readers to think about the equation above for a minute, to see if it makes sense now, if any.

…

…

…

The proposal is as follows. We will make it poetic, rather:

"The more I think about her
The more time I spend with her
The closer I feel that I am to her

"I want to spend my life time with her

Waking up in the morning next to her
Watching her doing her things in the house

"I am so happy that she is near
I hope she feels the same way
If not, I shall buy her more flowers perhaps"

With jokes aside, the proposition is this. The more Adam spends time remembering Eve's image, the closer he feels about her. Meaning, the more time of Adam thinking about Eve shrinks the distance from Adam to Eve.

The flip side of the coin, the story goes like so. The less time Eve spends thinking about Adam, the more distance from Eve to Adam will result. Because Eve spends so little time thinking about Adam, like she is forgetting Adam, as Adam's images in her memory fade away, the distance from Eve to Adam gets enlarged, no pun intended please.

7. Relational Distance Summarized

So basically, the more time a person X spends remembering, thinking about a person Y,

the smaller the distance from X to Y becomes. Say, X is a huge fan of a celebrity Y, a singer and dancer on TV. But Y, an internationally famous prima donna, does not know of the existence of her fan, Mr. X. X does not mind of such fact, of course. X is a patron, a client, a customer of Ms. Y's product- her album, her music, her music videos. X is a willing buyer of Y's musical, choreographical products.

Since X listens to Y's music all the time, watches her music video daily, and reads about her news frequently, as X is a huge fan of the one celebrity Y, X feels very close to Y. The distance from X to Y is a close one, like, 1 foot or 1 inch.

But, Y does not know of X's existence. X is just one of many fans that Y has never met before. The distance from Y to X is infinity, a very big number. Why? It is because:

$$D = \frac{1}{T} = \frac{1}{0} = \infty$$

Our dear politically scientific readers- are you now convinced that the time and space are inversely proportional to each other?

IV. Emotion Equals the Dot Product of Two Opinion Vectors

1. A Set of Issues

So we are climbing up the ladder, hiking up the mountain to reach the promise land of the Voter's Equation that we introduced from the getto get-go. Oh well //xD.

Ladies and gents, we are in the realm of political science, or politics in short. So let us indulge in political issues. We shall pick and choose three issues. LGBT, Gun, and Abortion. Any objection?

…

2. Cartesian Coordinate System and Ideology Space

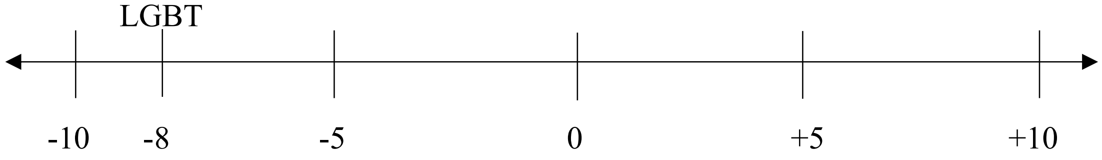
Say, Adam is a conservative Christian Republican. And the one Brian is a liberalist, a secular man but he is an undeclared, unaffiliated, an independent person without any party affiliation. Brian secretly sympathizes with the Democratic Party platform. Mr. Brian subscribes to all the ideologies that the Democratic Party advocates for: he is pro-LGBT, anti-Gun, and pro-abortion.

Now, there is a third person, Mr. Charlie. He is like, half and half. He is a pro-Gun person, but when it comes to the LGBT issue, he is pro-family. Abortion? He's neutral on that one.

…

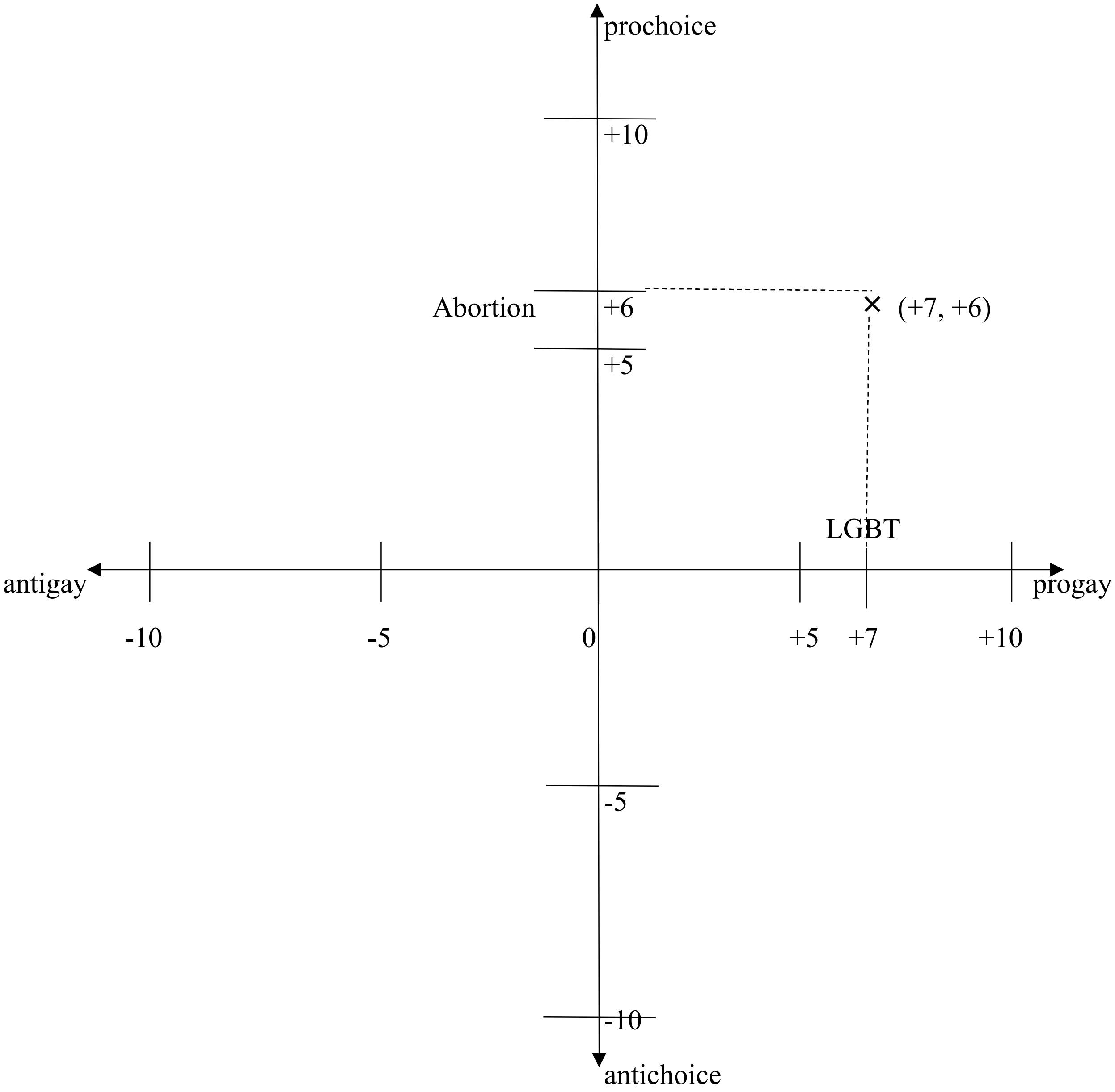
Adam is a conservative. He doesn't wanna say that he is anti-LGBT. He would rather characterize his world viewpoint as pro-family. He wouldn't say he's anti-abortion either. He'll say he's pro-life. He does not want to look like a negative person. He wants to appear to be an all-positive, all-optimistic, an all-American goody-goody dude.

Now, in one Mr. Adam's world and on his eyes, the ideology of LGBT-ism is not a sound one. In the normalized, standardized scale spectrum between -10 and +10, Adam places LGBT-ism at -8:



To Adam, LGBT ideology is something negative. He hates no one. He only hates sins, not sinners, as he is a practicing Christian. In his world point of view, right side of the "0" is the pro-family ideology, also known as the heterosexuality or straightness. To the left of the point of origin is the leftist ideology of LGBT. In Adam's eyes, LGBT community members are the misguided ones with mis-directed passions. But he does not want to say he is an anti-LGBT. He'd rather say, he's pro-life. Because he does not want to let people think that he's a negative person.

Now, let us turn our attention to a closet liberalist, Mr. Brian. He lives in a conservative-majoritarian town, so he keeps his political status hidden. Mr. Brian's two-dimensional ideological coordinate system looks like this:



So, all in all, conservative Adam and liberal Brian have something in common after all: they wanna portray themselves as someone positive. Instead of calling himself a pro-abortion man, Brian would rather call it, pro-choice-ism. Like, individual freedom, a constitutional right and liberty to one's body, a woman's right to choose what's happening inside her belly, etc.

Now, in Brian's world view, he finds himself to be in the Cartesian coordinate of (+7, +6). We are placing a person, Brian, in a two-dimensional ideological space. But the coordinate is Brian's. It is not a universal coordinate, but a relativistic one, according to Brian's point of view.

To Brian, Adam is a rather negative character, having a coordinate of (-8, -7), because Brian knows that Adam is anti-gay and anti-choice. Of course, in Adam's viewpoint, Adam himself is like, (+8, +9), because he is pro-family by magnitude of 8, and he is pro-life by the strength of 9. As you can see with ease, people disagree. No surprise there, lol.

3. Emotion Equation

Let us have a second look at our Feelings equation:

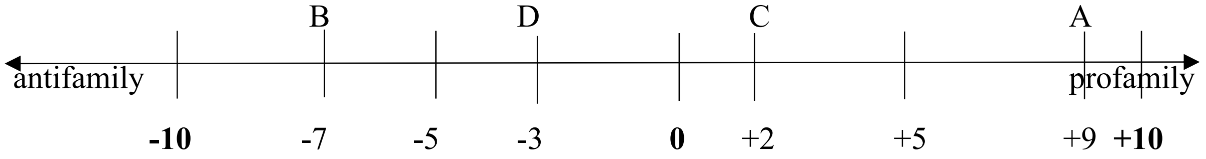
$$\mathrm{F}(\mathrm{I}, x, c) = \frac{\mathbf{O}(\mathrm{I}, x) \cdot \mathbf{O}(\mathrm{I}, x, c)}{D(x, c)}$$

The upper half (numerator) of the right-hand side of the equation, we will call it Emotion function:

$$\mathrm{E}(\mathrm{I}, x, c) = \mathbf{O}(\mathrm{I}, x) \cdot \mathbf{O}(\mathrm{I}, x, c)$$

This one Emotion function is coordinate-invariant, which makes Feelings function also coordinate-invariant (see next section). What does it mean? We shall demonstrate by examples. Again, let us assume that Adam is conservative, Brian is a liberalist, Charlie and Daniel are independents. In this demonstration, we will consider only one issue, hence, one-dimensional coordinate system suffices.

In Adam's world, the four people's coordinates look like as follows:



In Adam's world view, LGBT-ism, or gayism for short, is a harmful ideology. So when Adam sees Brian being a rather fervent advocate of progayism, he feels pretty bad, because Adam is a strong antigayist. Again, Adam does not hate LGBT community members but he only objects to LGBT ideology, as he is a devout Christian man.

Let us calculate the emotion of Adam when he observes Brian's progayist activism:

$$\mathrm{E}(\text{gayism}, Adam, Brian) = \mathbf{O}(\text{gayism}, Adam) \cdot \mathbf{O}(\text{gayism}, Adam, Brian)$$

$$= +9 * -7 = -63$$

What the equation above means is as follows. **O**(gayism, Adam) means Adam's opinion on gayism. He feels strongly against gayism but to him, antigayism is a positive, constructive ideology, so he places antigayism on the right side of the X-axis, and calls it a pro-family-ism.

So Adam assigns himself the score of +9, in the sliding scale of -10 to +10, -10 being the most progayistic, +10 being the most antigayistic. And Adam observes Brian being a rather vocal advocate of progayism, so he assigns Brian -7 in the gayism issue coordinate system above.

Please note that **O**(gayism, Adam, Brian) means Brian's opinion on gayism, as far as Adam knows. Adam may have misunderstood and been misinformed about Brian's take on this issue. The reason is that the channels of flows of information get noisy sometimes. Words of Brian pass through long linear communication chain of people's ears and tongues, from Brian's mouth to 10 people in the middle to finally Adam's ears. Some of original ideas of Brian gets lost in translation and in transmission.[14]

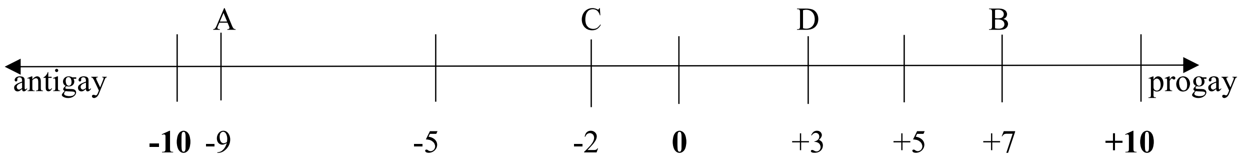
4. Coordinate Invariance of Emotion Equation

Though the author disproved the validity of Mr. Einstein's special and general relativity theories as noted in a footnote prior, Mr. Einstein did contribute to science quite a bit. After all, he popularized the concepts of thought experiment, space-time interrelationship, and yes, the tensor calculus.

The author does not know too much about tensor analysis, but he does have some superficial knowledge thereof. Like, the concepts of co-variance, contra-variance, and in-variance. Our dear readers, please feel free to search these mathematical terms in your favorite online internet search engines //:-)

So. What we are gonna focus on today is the coordinate invariance.[15]

Let us take a look at Brian's world view regarding gayism by plotting his ideology space in a one-dimensional coordinate system like so:



Now, let us calculate the emotion of Brian when he observes Adam's antigayist activism:

---

[14] See https://en.wikipedia.org/wiki/Information_theory for Mr. Shannon's theory about information loss and noisy channels.

[15] See https://en.wikipedia.org/wiki/Invariant_(mathematics); https://en.wikipedia.org/wiki/Invariants_of_tensors ; https://mathworld.wolfram.com/Tensor.html ; https://en.wikipedia.org/wiki/Tensor .

$$\mathrm{E}(\text{gayism}, Brian, Adam) = \mathbf{O}(\text{gayism}, Brian) \cdot \mathbf{O}(\text{gayism}, Brian, Adam)$$

$$= +7 * -9 = -63$$

$$= +9 * -7 = \mathrm{E}(\text{gayism}, Adam, Brian)$$

As we can see, the result of Emotion function stays the same whether we adopt Adam's coordinate system or Brian's coordinate system. The reason for the coordinate-invariance property of Emotion function is partly due to the commutativity of multiplication operation.[16] Meaning, -x * +y = +y * -x = -xy. That is, the ordering does not matter in a multiplication.

Next, let us examine the emotion when Brian observes Daniel's progayistic standpoint:

$$\mathrm{E}(\text{gayism}, Brian, Daniel) = \mathbf{O}(\text{gayism}, Brian) \cdot \mathbf{O}(\text{gayism}, Brian, Daniel)$$

$$= +7 * +3 = +21$$

Then, compare the above with the following. Adam observes that Brian and Daniel agrees on the issue of gayism, and Adam takes a guess about the emotion that Brian and Daniel would feel from such political agreement. Let us express such cerebral activity in mathematical language:

$$\mathrm{E}(\text{gayism}, Adam, (Brian, Daniel)) = \mathbf{O}(\text{gayism}, Adam, Brian) \cdot \mathbf{O}(\text{gayism}, Adam, Daniel)$$

$$= -7 * -3 = +21$$

$$= +7 * +3 = \mathrm{E}(\text{gayism}, Brian, Daniel)$$

As we can see, the result of the Emotion function does not depend on the coordinate that we choose to calculate the function. The function results in the same value both in Adam's conservative coordinate system and Brian's liberalist coordinate system. This time around, the coordinate-invariance property originates from a handy dandy fact that minus times minus is a plus, and plus times plus is a plus.

So all in all, we got down the coordinate-invariance property of the Emotion function.

By the way, Emotion equation is asymmetric, i.e., non-commutative. That is,

---

[16] See https://en.wikipedia.org/wiki/Commutative_property .

$$E(\text{Adam}, \text{Daniel}) \neq E(\text{Daniel}, \text{Adam})$$

The reason is, in a phrase, information asymmetry[17]. Say, Daniel is liberalistic, Adam is conservativistic. Daniel knows Adam's conservativism but Daniel portray himself to be a conservative when he talks to Adam. So Adam has a good emotion about Daniel. But as a liberalist, Daniel does not have a good emotion about Adam. Daniel pretends he likes Adam in order to get his vote, in this hypothetical example.

Furthermore, the asymmetricity of Emotion equation results in the asymmetricity of Feelings equation as well. Of course, Distance equation is also asymmetric, which also contributes to asymmetricity of Feelings equation.

5. Opinion Vectors[18] and Their Dot Product[19]

Let us consider a set of issues. Lgbtism (abbreviated as "L"), Gunnism ("G"), and

Fetus-ism ("F", we substitute Fetusism for Abortionism to prevent confusion of acronyms, as we reserve "A" to denote a person Adam). We chose the three subject matters on purpose, because we are doing political science here and the three issues have been hotly debated topics between the left and the right in America for decades by now, in this propitious year 2020[20].

In computer science, especially in the area of artificial intelligence,[21] heuristic,[22] optimization,[23] artificial neural network,[24] there are useful notions such as weight vector,[25] and evaluation function.[26] We shall recycle those two concepts and repurpose them for our own use here.[27]

We have an ordered set of three issues,

---

[17] See https://en.wikipedia.org/wiki/Information_asymmetry .

[18] See https://en.wikipedia.org/wiki/Vector_(mathematics_and_physics) .

[19] See https://en.wikipedia.org/wiki/Dot_product .

[20] The author is a presidential candidate on paper, though his name won't be on the ballot, as he registered to run for president and he did not drop out and he won't. His presidential campaign slogan is "Vision 2020," as some of his friends suggested him to use the 2020 vision concept, when he was an undergraduate student in Madison, WI, in 2002, expressing his ambition of American presidency.

[21] See https://en.wikipedia.org/wiki/Artificial_intelligence .

[22] See https://en.wikipedia.org/wiki/Heuristic_(computer_science) .

[23] See https://en.wikipedia.org/wiki/Mathematical_optimization .

[24] See https://en.wikipedia.org/wiki/Artificial_neural_network .

[25] See https://deepai.org/machine-learning-glossary-and-terms/weight-artificial-neural-network .

[26] See https://en.wikipedia.org/wiki/Evaluation_function .

[27] As a brief biographical footnote, the author majored in computer science in University of Wisconsin-Madison, studied for two years in a computational biology Ph.D. program in Cornell University, before he dropped out to become an actor in Los Angeles, California.

I = (L, G, F)

Then, Adam's set of opinions on those issues can be expressed as:

$$\mathbf{O}(I, A) = (-9, +2, +5)$$

That is, Adam is very anti-gay-istic, mildly pro-gunn-istic, and fairly pro-fetus-istic. In English, Adam strongly believes that lgbt-ism is a harmful ideology; he mildly believes in loosening gun regulation; and he is fairly pro-life.

The ordered set of numbers above is what we call, an "opinion vector". Each element of an opinion vector are normalized, or standardized, so that it ranges from -10 to +10. The sign "-" means "anti-" of the given issue, "+" means "pro-" of that issue.

The magnitude of each element of the opinion vector corresponds to the "weight" of that issue to the person. Meaning, to Adam, lgbt-ism is a high-priority issue and he has a very strong feeling about it. When it comes to election season, a candidate's stance on lgbt-ism will weigh heavy in Adam's decision of who to vote for. Adam does care about his gun right and fetuses' right to life as well, but not nearly as much as he cares about lgbt issue.

Now, let's say there are three candidates before Adam the voter: Brian, Charlie, and Daniel. We all know that Adam and Charlie are conservative; Brian and Daniel are liberalists. So it may seem easy to predict that Adam would vote for Charlie, but it may not be as simple, due to the information loss or noise in the channel and flow of data.

Let us look at the opinion vectors of each candidate, from Adam's knowledge base:

$$\mathbf{O}(I, A) = (-9, +2, +5)$$

$$\mathbf{O}(I, A, B) = (+7, -2, -9)$$

$$\mathbf{O}(I, A, C) = (-2, +2, 0)$$

$$\mathbf{O}(I, A, D) = (-9, +2, +5)$$

Please note that the last three rows correspond to Adam's knowledge on Brian, Charlie, and Daniel's opinions on the three issues, which may be correct or incorrect.

Say, both Brian and Daniel are liberalists, but Brian is honest and Daniel is dishonest. When Daniel personally met Adam, Daniel first listened to what Adam has to say in those issues, and when asked, Daniel told Adam what Adam wanted to hear.

Now, based on the information or misinformation of Adam above, let us calculate the "Emotion" that Brian brings to Adam:

$$E(I, A, B) = \mathbf{O}(I, A) \cdot \mathbf{O}(I, A, B) = (-9, +2, +5) \cdot (+7, -2, -9)$$
$$= -9*7 + 2*-2 + 5*-9 = -63 -4 -45 = - 112$$

Obviously, Brian is not scoring at all in Adam's mind. Please note that the above "Emotion formula" is a rather artificial construction to denote the numerator part of our "Feelings equation" that we introduced earlier.

Let us get through the rest of the candidates using the same Emotion formula:

$$E(I, A, C) = \mathbf{O}(I, A) \cdot \mathbf{O}(I, A, C) = (-9, +2, +5) \cdot (-2, +2, 0)$$
$$= -9*-2 + 2*2 + 5*0 = 18 + 4 + 0 = + 22$$
$$E(I, A, D) = \mathbf{O}(I, A) \cdot \mathbf{O}(I, A, D) = (-9, +2, +5) \cdot (-9, +2, +5)$$
$$= -9*-9 + 2*2 + 5*5 = 81 + 4 + 25 = +110$$

So it seems Daniel the liar would get Adam's vote. But, the thing is that, as a candidate, Daniel would have interviews and eventually Adam may learn about Daniel's true position on the issues. When Adam finds out, he may tell others about Daniel's lies and that may hurt Daniel's chance of winning the election. Or, alternatively, Adam may kinda have got the gut feeling that Daniel wasn't so sincere when he talked to him the other day.

All in all, Adam probably may end up voting for Charlie. Let us make one observation here. While Adam is a fairly hardcore right-winger, Charlie is a fairly moderate conservative. So Adam isn't too excited about Charlie, just as Charlie isn't too excited about Adam's antigayistic stance. But well, Charlie's got the highest score after Adam found about Daniel's lies. So Adam votes for Charlie, most likely.

V. Putting It All Together: Voter's Equation

1. An English Narrative

We have spent enough time with mathematics mumbo jumbos. Let us get down to earth and do some business, shall we? Well, let us just have some fun instead, how does that sound?

The Emotion equation is basically saying that when two people agree, they're happy. When they disagree, they're unhappy. That's pretty much it.

Then, how is it possible that a man and a woman get married and live for decades together? Two people can't agree on everything, because we are all individuals with different backgrounds. Even two identical twins don't agree on every single issue.[28]

Politics and religion are two taboo topics to talk about, unless the two people are close friends or otherwise mature individuals who can tolerate the difference civilly. In this topsy-turvy world, many people decide to hide their opinions in order to avoid unnecessary conflicts and unproductive confrontations. After all, we're busy and we can use some peace.

But, say, what if there is this majoritarian ideology that the mainstream media is broadcasting day and night? You hear it in the radio, read it in the news, and watch it on TV. Popular ideologies come and go. Back in the days during Prez. Obama's tenure, the media-dominating ideology was progayism. Then, anti-climate-change-ism took the stand. Then, yes, the anti-covid-19-ism. Then, the post-covid/Floyd-BLM-ism.[29] What will come next? We shall see. A dominant ideology at a time gets replaced by another, newer, more trendy ideology as time passes us by.

Let's talk about progayism. Back when Prez. Clinton was there, the majority of Americans were antigayists. After all, the Democratic Party President Bill signed the Defense of Marriage Act bill into a law.[30] Decades later when Prez. Obama took the office as a firm advocate of LGBT rights, the former Prez. Clinton changed his position on the LGBT issue and became a progayist, as it has become a more popular ideology.[31] Believe or not, the now-former Prez. Obama wasn't always a progayist.[32]

---

[28] See https://www.sciencedaily.com/releases/2008/02/080206091437.htm . The study found a strong correlation of political stance in identical twins, but again, it's not 100% agreement between identical twins. It found that compared to non-identical twins, identical twins tend to agree more on political issues.

[29] See https://en.wikipedia.org/wiki/Black_Lives_Matter . BLM originally was a legitimate, peaceful activism. But it turned violent after covid-19 era. One theory is that, since people were locked in homes due to covid-19, the only legal way to get outside, to get together again is to protest for BLM. Since peaceful assembly for a political cause is a constitutional right of 1st Amendment, the BLM protesters got away with it even if they were not practicing social distancing. When it comes to Mr. Floyd, we regret his passing but deaths during arrests have always happened. But in year 2020, such death happened after covid-19 quarantine. People were bored at home and they wanted an excuse to get out and get together and get their ya-ya's out. That's one possibility, one theory to explain why BLM turned to unprecedented level of violence in U.S. activism history.

[30] See https://en.wikipedia.org/wiki/Defense_of_Marriage_Act .

To be fair, let us take a close look at our incumbent Republican President, Prez. Trump at the present year of 2020. As it turns out, Prez. Trump has not always been a pro-life-ist either.[33] Do we see the pattern here? To our disappointment, many a politician, even several of the Presidents of the United States, they say what people want to hear. Why? Because they want to be elected. Why? Any thoughts?

…

There could be many a reason why someone runs for a public office. Perhaps they want to save the world, make a positive change for the community. Basically, in a sense, they perhaps want to be the next Jesuses, the saviors of the world.

Or, they may be ADD cases, like, attention deficit disorder, well, as a fun pun and joke of course. Some people crave for attentions and want to be on the spotlight. And it's not always a bad thing. Actors, singers, movie stars and thespians, performers, we do need people like that, the entertainers.

But when it comes to so called a leader of a city, a county, a state, a nation, even a leader of free world, it is quite alarming to observe that they, the politicians, say what people want to hear, just to get elected or re-elected. If they are not leaders but leadees, if they had to change themselves or pretend to be someone else just to get elected, then how can they change the world for the better?

Some people in democratic countries may be quick to judge countries with totalitarianism, communism, socialism, dictatorship, etc. But now we can kinda see that democracy isn't without problems either. Look at us, the U.S. in the year 2020, the year that once was supposed to be promising and auspicious. In America, with post-covid, post-Floyd BLM-ism, people are divided into right and left to the extreme. They're renaming buildings, burning down buildings, spray buildings, breaking into buildings, etc. Crimes are too common. And this is America in year 2020. The author can't say with his conscience that American democracy or its capitalism is faring that much better than other countries with differing political ideologies.

In America, do we really have freedom of speech? If so, why do Americans lose their jobs for making a joke? They may have voiced their objections to progayism, pro-blm-ism, anti-climate-change-ism. Or they may have joked about it. But losing a job over it? That's not what America once used to be. America has become something else. Something very unrecognizable. Something very oppressive, something smacking of fascistic oppression of freedom.

---

[31] See http://www.msnbc.com/hardball/timeline-bill-clintons-evolution-gay-rig .
[32] See https://time.com/3816952/obama-gay-lesbian-transgender-lgbt-rights/ .
[33] See https://www.mercurynews.com/2020/01/24/once-proudly-pro-choice-trump-attends-march-for-life/ .

Well, enough criticism on the left. How about the conservatives? Well, the author himself is a conservative, but he has to express some criticism on Prez. Trump, whom the author voted for in 2016. Prez. Trump, though he got some merits, is too divisive a figure. A leader of a nation, America, should be able to include both the left and the right. Why? Because the liberalists, about half of the population, they're Americans too. Like it or not, the half of America will always be liberalists, the other half conservs. And it's good that way in a sense, because we Americans do not want to see a day when America has only one party, like in Iran, North Korea, Russia, or China. Two-party system provides checks and balances and prevents dictatorship, you know.

2. Back to Math: Relational Distance

We took a nice break from all that math and we will occasionally do so later in the paper.

Now, let us revisit our Feelings equation:

$$\mathrm{F}(\mathrm{I}, x, y) = \frac{\mathbf{O}(\mathrm{I}, x) \cdot \mathbf{O}(\mathrm{I}, x, y)}{D(x, y)}$$

The numerator, the upper part of the right side of the equation, we named it as Emotion formula. The denominator part, *D(x, y)*, is what we covered before and named as relational distance from *x* to *y*. Putting the Emotion and the distance together, we get the full Feelings equation.

If you recall,

$$D(x, y) = \frac{1}{T(x, y)}$$

Then,

$$\mathrm{F}(\mathrm{I}, x, y) = T(x, y) \times \mathbf{O}(\mathrm{I}, x) \cdot \mathbf{O}(\mathrm{I}, x, y)$$

This means that the memory time is an amplifying, or diminishing factor to the emotion term.

For instance, let's ask, who is the usual suspect in a violent crime? It is typically someone that the victim knows, be it a family member, a lover, a co-worker, a roommate, a classmate, or even a friend.[34] The reason is, if a person *x* spends a very long time interacting with a person *y* because they are physically proximate, of if *x* spends a very long time perceiving *y* because *y* is a celebrity and *x* sees *y* on TV or news all the time, then the relational distance from *x* to *y* is a very close one, resulting in a very short distance like 0.0001. Then, the memory time becomes 10,000, a big amplifying factor of negative emotion. Do you recall that the assassin of Mr. John Lennon was a huge fan of Mr. John Lennon, or that the assassin of J.F.K. spent a huge amount of time reading news about J.F.K.?

---

[34] See https://ucr.fbi.gov/crime-in-the-u.s/2011/crime-in-the-u.s.-2011/offenses-known-to-law-enforcement/expanded/expanded-homicide-data . It says, "In 2011, in incidents of murder for which the relationships of murder victims and offenders were known, 54.3 percent were killed by someone they knew (acquaintance, neighbor, friend, boyfriend, etc.); 24.8 percent of victims were slain by family members."

Of course, the flip side of the story is the positive one. Why does Adam want to marry Eve? It is because she has everything that Adam wants to see in a woman, i.e., she is very agreeable to Adam. In order to amplify his positive emotion, i.e., to maximize his happiness, Adam does everything to win Eve's heart. Eve is a lady and she may want a wealthy man, for instance. Then Adam would study hard, get a high paying job, so that he can afford to buying Eve flowers, clothes, jewelries, high heel shoes, and he would buy big house and multiple cars so that Eve would marry him. Or Adam may want to be a rock star and start to learn guitar and write songs and lyrics, etc. Women have been always a huge motivator for men's diligence. All in all, Adam wants to marry Eve in order to shorten the relational distance from him to her, by spending ample time with her. Now, let's move on.

But, let's hang on a bit more. The question is, why did the assassins that we mentioned above stop thinking about the celebrities or presidents if they found the celebs so bothersome? Well, the thing is, some people are addicted to anger, and they feel more comfortable when they are angry because they're so used to the emotion of anger, possibly because they grew up in angry families as children. In contrast, most people want to be happy and they stop seeing or thinking about people who they find unpleasant. This is why people break up or divorce, or flip TV channels, to stay away from negative emotion, or to minimize negative feelings by diminishing the memory time, i.e., by amplifying the relational distance.

3. Five Strategies to Pursue Happiness According to Feelings Equation

We got diverted away from politics, but it was by design. In order to understand the

behaviorism of voters and politicians, we have to step back and get a firm foundational understanding of human nature. So let us explore this. We will get back to politics, we promise //:-)

a. Strategy One: Change Others

Well, we're back to politics already. Why do some people run for public offices? Many

a reason may exist, like they say, it depends on individuals. But for many, they want to make laws, hence the name, lawmakers. They want to legislate such that people would conform to their laws, the laws that they write. This is what it means to have a control, power over the people. Fortunately for us, the U.S., at least in theory, people have the power to elect the future legislators. But we do observe in many cases that once they're elected, they do their own things. In some cases, marriage works the same way. Adam used to say, "Oh Eve, I'll do whatever to make you happy once you marry me." But once married, Eve may come and say, "Oh Adam, only if I knew. What a deception!" Sorry, a bad joke //xD

So, as they say, "If you wanna change the world, be the change." The thing is, not everyone wants to run for an office. But still a person *x* wants to change the world so that other people would become more like *x*, think like him, feel like him. Why? If people are thinking, feeling, walking and talking the same way as *x* does, then *x* would be happy. Remember the Emotion equation? Agreement means positive emotion, disagreement means negative emotion.

x does not want to be a politician for some reason. Perhaps he does not have the level of diligence or boldness to run for an election, do all that campaigning. Then what option does he have? Perhaps activism. If it is a peaceful activism, that is his constitutional right and it is a legitimate way of passing out messages.[35] But if it is a violent activism, as we see in post-covid/Floyd BLM[36] movement, then it becomes a problem.

Another problem we recently saw is the fascistic cancel-culture. Cancel-culture-ism is a tool adopted by some activists who want to silence opinions counter to their own. If someone jokes about or criticizes gay marriage for instance, some activists spread the words about that critic or that joker in social media. Once the cancel-culturist gathers enough crowd and media attention, they collectively contact the employer of the critic/joker and demand the firing, the termination of employment. We are not talking about some third-world developing country with absolute dictatorship. We're talking about America in 21st century, the shining beacon of modern democracy. Somehow, fascism did not die with World War II. It is very much alive. Even in America in year 2020.

b. Strategy Two: Change Yourself

When an ideology rises from beneath the ocean, and grows bigger and bigger into a

humongous beast that everyone on earth can see the image thereof,[37] some people choose to subscribe to that ideology. They may resist it for a while, but hey, people are busy. They got jobs, families, hobbies, cars and houses and kids and pets to take care of. They got their mortgages, electricity bills, insurance premiums, etc. Most people can't afford the time and energy and attention to resist a mainstream, dominant ideology of the day. We wouldn't go so far as characterizing such ideological subscription as worshiping the 666, but we couldn't help noticing the ostensible analogical similarity. Is it fair to say? //xD

---

[35] See https://en.wikipedia.org/wiki/Activism . History has multitudinous examples of politicians who once were activists with burning passion to change the world in towards positive directions.

[36] Let us give an analogy here. A vast majority of Muslims are peaceful, law-abiding, hard-working people. Islamic terrorists do not represent Muslims. Likewise, violent BLMists do not represent the silent majority of African Americans, who are beautiful, handsome, talented, hard-working, law-abiding citizens of the United States. Both Islamic terrorists and violent BLMists are doing a huge disservice to Muslim and African American communities because they're damaging the reputation of the religious or ethnic communities that they belong to. All these violence should stop. We all agree violence is bad. Of course, we should work on technologies so that police arrest procedure would be safer to everyone involved. How about we invent a gun that can shoot out a wireless projectile so that it electrically shocks and disables a criminally accused person? Violent protesting is not a constructive idea. What they should do instead is to study science and engineering and become inventors, or run for an office to be a politician or something, if they want to make a long-lasting change in society. An activism that adopts violence is an instance fascism that advocates a rule by fear.

[37] See https://www.biblegateway.com/passage/?search=Revelation%2013&version=NIV .

Let us look at our emotion equation once again:

$$\mathrm{E}(\mathrm{I}, x, y) = \mathbf{O}(\mathrm{I}, x) \cdot \mathbf{O}(\mathrm{I}, x, y)$$

Say, *x* and *y* are disagreeing and such disagreement results in *x*'s negative emotion, commonly known as pain. Pain is a generic, encompassing term. Depending on contexts, we call it disappointment, disillusionment, agony, misery, etc.

The first strategy that *x* adopts is to persuade *y* so that *y* gets more 'educated,' 'civilized,' 'enlightened,' or even 'repents'. When lgbt-ism was the king, some people used to call others who disagree with them, 'ignorant.' Such proselytization of an ideological doctrine is no different from catechism or baptism in Christian religion.

But say, such one person, *x*, fails to convince *y*. And *y* happened to be *x*'s superior, authority figure, like a boss, parent, or teacher. Then, *x* may have to change himself[38], in order to adapt and adjust and survive. Or *x* simply decides that the ideological battle takes low priority in his life and he doesn't want any unnecessary conflict or unproductive confrontation. So he decides to go along with whatever ideology out there is the most dominant. Our Mr. *x* is a busy man after all. He got wife and kids and pets to feed. No time to think whether a dominant ideology is a sound one or not. He adjusts and adapts himself to the mainstream, in order to minimize the pain that would come from disagreement with the majoritarian culture of the day.

c. Strategy Three: Silence Your Opinions

Perhaps, our one Mr. *x* is just too smart and/or too conscientious to think that this one

popular ideology is a beneficial ideology. He may ask himself, "Is there really one good thing in a homosexual relationship? Is there any good in it at all? Or is it some kind of developmental disability? Perhaps some men didn't have a chance to learn to date a girl." But alas, again, such antigayist activism is not his area of profession. So he decides to keep his objection to progayism to himself. He keeps silence. When the movies and TVs praise and worship the virtue and beauty of homosexuality, he talks to himself in silence, "There they go again. Idolatry. Things haven't changed much since the Old Testament days when Moses was here on earth."

---

[38] Please note that the author is a male and that is why he uses male pronouns, because it's easier for him. The author is not a sexist or misogynist //!-) The author will not use expressions like "he or she," "him or her," "his or her," "himself or herself," etc., because such gender neutral expression is too bulky, cumbersome, tedious, inefficient, unnecessary, and unattractive. So in this paper, a male pronoun is used to denote a generic person, like back in the good ole days. The author is a male and that's why it is easier for him to use male pronouns from a male perspective of things. If an author is a female and if she exclusively uses female pronouns, this author would understand and raise no objections. //:-)

d. Lie to Others

Of course, not every elected officials are liars. Or, perhaps they are. Because we, *Homo sapiens*, we are all liars, aren't we? Perhaps it's even unfair to demand politicians to stop lying, for politicians, they're humans too.[39]

But, when the author ran for an office like, two weeks ago by now as of writing this portion, he did his very best to be honest with the voters in his locality. He, or Yours Truly, had interviews with local journalists[40], wrote letter-to-the-editor articles to local newspapers[41], spoke in front of audience in local political public meetings[42], and called in to local political radio talk shows[43] during his 3-month campaign. Perhaps he was too honest to get elected.

He would express his views publicly that he is an anti-gay-ist, a pro-choice-ist, an anti-marijuana-ist, anti-tattoo-ist, anti-piercing-ist, an anti-ultra-inter-racial-ist,[44] anti-obesity-ist, etc. I mean, come on. He ran on a Republican ticket and if he's a pro-choice-ist, we all know he can't never get past Republican primary election. But the author doesn't think that was the case. Then why did he lost in the primary election? We shall offer a detailed analysis later in this paper. Stay tuned, please //:-D

---

[39] Likewise, perhaps it is impossible to expect that judges or Justices of high courts to be politically neutral. It is because politics is a part of human nature, and a parcel of human condition. Democratic or Republican, a President nominate federal judges and Justices according to their political leaning. See https://en.wikipedia.org/wiki/Ideological_leanings_of_United_States_Supreme_Court_justices .

[40] The kind and generous local journalists who interviews the author include *Politadick*, *Alaska Landmine,* and *Alaska Watchman.*

[41] The local newspapers that kindly accepted the author's essays include *the People's Paper*, and *the Frontiersman*.

[42] The kind and generous local/business political agencies/clubs that allowed the author to speak in public include *Matsu Republican Women's Club, Valley Republican Women's Club, Matsu Borough Assembly, Wasilla City Council, Knik-Fairview Community Council, Big Lake Community Council, North Lakes Community Council, Meadow Lakes Community Council, Point MacKenzie Community Council, Wasilla Rotary Club, Wasilla Chamber of Commerce, American Legion Palmer/Wasilla Chapter,* and *Veterans of Foreign War Wasilla Chapter.*

[43] The kind and generous local radio talk show hosts who took the author's phone calls during his campaign include Mr. Tom Anderson, Mr. Mike Porcaro, Mr. Dan Fagan, Mr. Rick Rydell, and Mr. Dave Stieren. The author managed to get in the national level radio talk shows once for the shows by Mr. Jim Bohannon and Mr. Glenn Beck.

[44] Anti-ultra-inter-racialism is an ideology that opposes the marriage between an ethnic man and a beautiful young fertile Caucasian female. The purpose of the ideology is to preserve, conserve, and protect a vulnerable, potentially endangered-to-be subspecies of Caucasian race. If an ethnic man like the author himself marries a beautiful young fertile Caucasian female with blue eyes, white skin, and blonde hair, their children will have brown hair, brown eyes, brown skin like him. Then the Caucasian trait is lost and the author does not think that's to the best interest of humanity. After all, we want diversity of human race. We want to see the preservation of natural blue eyes, pink skin, red hair, green eyes, blonde hair, white skin, yellow skin, orange skin, etc. It's a concept in wild life preservation. We want there to be white bears, brown bears, and black bears. We want there to be Chihuahuas, Poodles, Dalmatians. There is some benefit of occasional interracial marriage, as introduction of foreign gene can prove healthy for the race. Too purely intra-racial marriage may be unhealthy like incest would be. But mostly, while recognizing and conceding to the value of occasional interracialism, an antiultrainterracialist philosopher recommend same-race, opposite-gender marriage, if they're young enough to have kids. Just a suggestion //!-)

e. Strategy Number Five: Run Away

When the author was in law school in Ann Arbor, Michigan, he was watching a documentary in YouTube. T'was about boondock Saints in the forest of Alaska. He was so fascinated with all these Alaskan TV shows like *Yukon Men* or *Alaska the Last Frontier* or documentaries about Alaskans living off of the land, in the middle of nowhere, away from civilization or ease of technology. That was one of several reasons why the author came to Alaska after he graduated from the law school.

Another reason was the 2015 U.S. Supreme Court decision about the legality of gay marriage.[45] In a documentary about Alaskan backcountry lifestyle, the narrator goes, "Some people come to Alaska to get away from it all. The world that they cannot change, when they realize it, they run away and come to Alaska."

…

The author's kinda conservative in many respects, though he is severely liberal in some other aspects as well. But when the one SCOTUS[46] (acronym for The Supreme Court Of the United States) brazenly declared that an American has a constitutional right to be homosexual, the author had to run away from the far-leftist sentiment of the continental U.S. That was back in 2015, five years ago. The author graduated the alma mater law school in two years, as he took two summer semesters, without doing internship or clerkship like his colleagues did. Then he flew to Alaska, without knowing anyone, without a job lined up. He just came. To be a part of the Alaskan adventure.

Now, we had enough break time from math. Let's get back at it, shall we? Here:

---

[45] See https://en.wikipedia.org/wiki/Obergefell_v._Hodges .

[46] One common popular misconception is that the Scotus decision is the law of the land. Well, that's the famed Justice John Marshall's judicial review doctrine. See https://en.wikipedia.org/wiki/Judicial_review_in_the_United_States . But even some of Scotus Justices think that judicial review doctrine is an unsound one. The U.S. Constitution does not give such a supreme power to one branch of the government. If Scotus can nullify any federal or state law by declaring it unconstitutional, then Scotus becomes an oligarchical dictator. Constitution is all about preventing the concentration of despotic power. Thus, yes, judicial review doctrine is unconstitutional. Scotus can't just legalize gay marriage, because such law-making power should be reserved to legislature, not judiciary.

$$\mathrm{F}(\mathrm{I}, x, W) = \frac{\mathbf{O}(\mathrm{I}, x) \cdot \mathbf{O}(\mathrm{I}, x, W)}{D(x, W)}$$

It's our same good ole Feelings equation, with a twist. Here, W means the world. Say, Mr. x realizes that he cannot change the world, and he can't change himself. And the world and he are disagreeing and that brings up negative feelings. What does he do then? He decides to leave that world that he disagrees with, that he cannot change. His last option to minimize the pain of disagreement is to maximize the distance from the world, the denominator portion of the equation, $D(x, W)$.

Please note that distancing from the world that one disagrees does not mean a suicide. It means at times, a migration. Migration is a very common natural phenomenon. Birds and butterflies migrate every year, when they find the season "disagreeable," like too cold or too hot to their skins' feelings. Whales and fish also migrate seasonally. Of course, when it comes to human beings, we want migration to be done in a legal fashion //!-)

4. The Feelings Equation Revisited, Re-illustrated

Let us rewrite the two equations we began this paper with:

$$\mathrm{V}(x, C) = argmax(\mathrm{F}, C), \;\; where$$

$$\mathrm{F}(\mathrm{I}, x, c) = \frac{\mathbf{O}(\mathrm{I}, x) \cdot \mathbf{O}(\mathrm{I}, x, c)}{D(x, c)}, and\ c \in C.$$

Basically, x is a voter variable, C is an unordered set of candidates, and c is a candidate variable. In math, a variable is like a pronoun in English. c represents any random candidate on the election ballot, competing for the same seat. $\mathrm{V}(x, C)$ gives you the candidate c that maximizes your feeling $\mathrm{F}(\mathrm{I}, x, c)$.

Say, Adam is looking at three candidates, Brian and Charlie and Daniel. Like we've seen before, Adam gets the emotions for the three people like so:

$$\mathrm{E}(\mathrm{I, A, B}) = \mathbf{O}(\mathrm{I, A}) \cdot \mathbf{O}(\mathrm{I, A, B}) = (-9, +2, +5) \cdot (+7, -2, -9)$$

$$= -9*7 + 2*-2 + 5*-9 = -63 -4 -45 = -112$$

$$\mathrm{E}(\mathrm{I, A, C}) = \mathbf{O}(\mathrm{I, A}) \cdot \mathbf{O}(\mathrm{I, A, C}) = (-9, +2, +5) \cdot (-2, +2, 0)$$

$$= -9*-2 + 2*2 + 5*0 = 18 + 4 + 0 = +22$$

$$E(I, A, D) = \mathbf{O}(I, A) \cdot \mathbf{O}(I, A, D) = (-9, +2, +5) \cdot (-9, +2, +5)$$

$$= -9*-9 + 2*2 + 5*5 = 81 + 4 + 25 = +110$$

If you recall, Daniel lied to Adam, by misrepresenting his opinions on the three issues of LGBT, Gun, and Abortion. Let's assume, for the sake of argument, that Adam is as naïve as a bowl of primordial soup.[47] So Adam gives the highest Emotion score to Daniel. But the fact that Daniel managed to deceive Adam is that they just met and Adam doesn't know Daniel very well. And the Distance factor downstairs of the Feelings equation comes to rescue.

Let's say, Adam has in the past spent time registering Brian's image, cumulatively, 10 hours; Charlie 100 hours; and Daniel 0.1 hour. Then the relational Distance from Adam to each of them will look like:

$$E(A, B) = 1 / 10 = 0.1$$

$$E(A, C) = 1 / 100 = 0.01$$

$$E(A, C) = 1 / 0.1 = 10$$

Then, the Feelings that Adam have about them look like so:

$$F(A, B) = E(A, B) / D(A, B) = -112 / 0.1 = -1120$$

$$F(A, C) = E(A, C) / D(A, C) = +22 / 0.01 = +2200$$

$$F(A, D) = E(A, D) / D(A, D) = +110 / 10 = +11$$

That is, even if Daniel gave Adam the biggest positive emotion, since Adam does not know Daniel very well, the emotion gets diminished by the big Distance factor. After all, Adam wasn't sure whether Daniel was telling the truth about himself or not.

In contrast, Adam has known Charlie for a long time. In Adam's political taste, Charlie is too moderate a conservative, but since Charlie is a good friend of Adam, when Charlie even slightly agrees with Adam, Adam's Feelings about Charlie's candidacy gets the boosting factor of the big time that Adam and Charlie spent in years of friendship. That is, Adam and Charlie are close friends.

---

[47] See https://en.wikipedia.org/wiki/Primordial_soup .

5. The Voter's Equation

Now, one more thing and we're done with Voter's equation. Let's bring up the equation dude one more time:

$$\mathrm{V}(x, C) = argmax(\mathrm{F}, x, C)$$

The Voter's equation gives us a candidate that a voter will vote for, the candidate that the voter has the best feelings about. Please note that the resultant candidate is not who the voter thinks is the smartest or the best for the public office. It's a candidate that the voter feels like voting for.

So, let's plug in the numbers. Let's say, F is a set function whose input is a set of candidates, and whose output is a set of scores for each candidate:

$$\mathrm{F}(\mathrm{Adam}, C) = \mathrm{F}(\ \mathrm{Adam}, \{\mathrm{Brian, Charlie, Daniel}\}\ )$$

$$= \{\ \mathrm{F}(\mathrm{Adam, Brian}), \mathrm{F}(\mathrm{Adam, Charlie}), \mathrm{F}(\mathrm{Adam, Daniel})\ \}$$

$$= \{-1120, +2200, +11\}$$

And,

$$\mathrm{Max}\{\ \mathrm{F}(C)\ \} = \mathrm{Max}\{-1120, +2200, +11\} = +2200$$

Now, here is the critical step. We need to conduct the inverse function operation of the Feelings function.

$$\mathrm{V}(\mathrm{Adam}, C) = argmax(\mathrm{F}, \mathrm{Adam}, C) = \mathrm{F}^{-1}(\ \mathrm{Max}\{\ \mathrm{F}(\mathrm{Adam}, C)\ \}\ )$$

$$= \mathrm{F}^{-1}(\ +2200) = \mathrm{Charlie}$$

Alright. We came a long way and now we're done with the understanding of Voter's Equation. Let us take a break from all that math and do some narratives in the next chapter. We'll make it interesting and entertaining //:-D

VI. Case Study: Why and How the Author Lost the Primary Election

1. A Repose

So we managed to get through the gauntlet of understanding our Voter's equation. As far

As the author could find, there is none in existence outside of this paper. They say, it is an academician's duty to look for a theory already existing, if he thinks he's the first one to discover it. The inner product model of Emotion, vector expression of Opinion, it seems that they're novel concepts unknown to men. There is what's called Voting Calculus[48] but that is as far as the author could find and it is a cool theory but it is different from what we discuss here.

2. Why Did He Run for an Office?

Perhaps it's apposite to narrate it in a screenplay format. Please enjoy the humorized

version of a candidate interview with a local journalist. C is for the candidate, and J is for the journalist.

J: Why are you running, Mr.?

C: Oh. That. Well. I… ahh.. I wanna save the world.

J: Save the world?

C: Oh yeah. The plan is, ideally, I get elected this year 2020 as an Alaska State Senator. Then I'll run for U.S. Senate seat in year 2022. Then I'll run for U.S. President in year 2024.

J: Wow. What a plan, huh? How about the district you're running for? Don't tell me it's all about you. What are you gonna do for your district?

C: Oh well. They don't need me. Not really. They're doing perfectly fine. I mean some minor issues are there but compared to other cities, they're doing fantastic. They don't need me. I need them more than they need me.

J: So what I'm hearing is that you're running for a local election so that you can become the President of U.S. one day and then save the world?

C: Yes.

J: Good luck to your election, Mr.

C: Thank you, Sir-

---

[48] See https://en.wikipedia.org/wiki/Calculus_of_voting .

Scene[49]. //xD But jokes aside, the author was serious about his campaign and his interviews did indeed deal with local topics and national issues of course //:-)

3. How Did He Run?

One of the authors' hobbies is running[50]. Like, jogging. He is a quite well known local

Fixture who'd run in the middle of winter in Alaska, with a Hawaiian t-shirt on, on the frozen lake in town. He'd do pushups with his bare hands on the frozen lake too.

J: But the question is, how did you run the campaign, Mr.?

C: Oh Mr. Journalist, welcome back, Sir.

J: So what methodology did you adopt to get people's attention to your campaign?

C: Oh I wanna have fun, you know. I'd go to karaoke bars and sing songs and dance in front of everybody.[51] I'd go to dance clubs and dance on the dance floor when people were watching me.[52] Sometimes, I'd go to local restaurants and buy the patrons a round of drinks or food[53]. After the dog-and-pony routine, I'd hand out my campaign cards.

J: You got yourself campaign cards, huh. Show me one.

C: Oh, ok. (he pull out a deck of campaign cards and spread them on his two hands like unfolding a foldable hand fan, like a magician would do)

J: Pick a card, any card?

C: Yes, please.

J: All in different color, huh? Looks good. I'll pick the blue one.

C: Thank you. (he folds the cards into a deck and put them back in his wallet)

---

[49] See https://boards.straightdope.com/t/is-it-end-scene-or-and-scene/642851 . The author used to do some acting in Los Angeles, CA, in 2006-2008. An actor goes to an audition, does his monologue routine, and at the end of it, he says, "Scene" in order to signal the end of the monologue performance in front of directors, writers, etc.

[50] Pun intended //!-)

[51] Some bars that host karaoke nights that the author performed in his campaign include: Tailgaters in Wasilla, Floaters in Big Lake, Silver Fox in Meadow Lakes, Tug Bar in Point MacKenzie, Four Corners in Palmer. Some Alaskan live bands he danced at bars include: Those Guys from Matsu, Denali Cooks from Talkeetna, Ken Peltier Band from Anchorage. The author sincerely thanks kind and generous towners and neighbors who applauded when he sang and dance during the campaign. He also thank workers and owners and karaoke DJs in bars, clubs, restaurants who kindly and generously supported his campaign activities. When he sang in karaoke places, he would say, "Evening Ladies and Genglemen. My name is Huhnkie Lee and I'm running for Alaska State Senate, and this is my campaign song." Then he would sing love songs by Beatles, Beautiful South, BeeGees, Beach Boys, etc.

[52] Some clubs where he danced at in his campaign include: Mugshot Saloon in Wasilla, Four Corners in Palmer.

[53] Some restaurants where he visited in his campaign include: Everetts in Wasilla, Knik Bar in Knik-Fairview, Settlers' Bay Inn in Knik-Fairview, Tripple-J Roadhouse in Houston, Alaska.

J: Hmm. "Creative and bold solutions. Healthy diet and good exercises. Listen, learn from Alaskans. Eliminate homelessness, crimes, and spruce beetles. Elect Huhnkie Lee for AK Senate in year 2020!" Good!

C: Thank you, Sir //:-)

Scene.

Creative and Bold Solutions
Healthy Diet Good Exercises
Listen, Learn from Alaskans
Eliminate Homelessness Crimes Spruce Beetles
Elect Huhnkie Lee for AK Senate in Year 2020!
huhnkie@yahoo.com huhnkielee.blogspot.com

4. Why Did He Lose?

   a. A Respite

J: So, how did it feel when you lost the election?

C: Ha ha ha ha ha. Thank you for rubbing than in, brother.

J: Go on.

C: Oh it hit me pretty hard. I ended in the last place, you see. There were six of us in the primary and these people got many times of votes than I had. A big blow to my ego, you know.

J: How many votes you got?

C: 110.

J: Congratulations!

C: Yeah dude, I am eternally indebted to 110 kind and generous ladies and gentlemen who took the effort to have voted for me. May High and Almighty God bless them for generations to come. In Jesus, amen.

J: I'm sorry you lost, dude.

C: Thank you, buddy. But that's not the way I see it.

J: What's ya mean?

C: I mean, I didn't really lose anything. I gained, everything. I'm that one candidate who gained the most from this election.

J: I don't understand.

C: Oh ye with lil faith.

J: Huh?

C: What I'm saying is this. Look. During my past two years, I've been to many political meetings. During my past three months of intense campaigning, I'd go to public events and parks. I got a full-time lawyer job, you know, 40 hours a week. I got no retirement money or inheritance money or spousal support. So yeah, during the whole thang, I've been working to pay the bills.

J: Huh.

C: So yeah. After work, during weekday evenings and weekends, I'd go buy ice-cold water bottles and candies and goodies and what not, put them in tote bags, and go to public parks and events where there are a lot of people. And I'd hand them out water, candies, along with my campaign cards. I campaigned aggressively.[54]

J: Door-to-door knocking?

C: No, that's… I wouldn't do it cuz it's like, invasion of privacy, you see. It's not technically illegal in Alaska to do so unless there's "no trespass" sign of some sort.[55] But still, I'd rather hold myself to the highest standard of ethics and constitutionality. I wanna go above and beyond what's required of me as a candidate. So no, I would not go to someone's premises uninvited. I got some constitutional objection to that.

---

[54] During the campaign trail, the author also joined local chapters of American Legion, Veterans of Foreign War, and Association for Mature American Citizens. The parks and events he attended for his campaign purpose include: Wasilla Air Show, Big Lake Mud Volleyball, a peaceful BLM march in Palmer, Wasilla Lake Park, Wasilla Wonderland Park, Palmer Freedom Parade in 2020, Wasilla July 4th Parade in 2018, Big Lake Water Parade, etc.

[55] See https://www.survivalsullivan.com/alaska-trespassing-laws/ .

J: Road signs?

C: Well, campaign road sign, got no time, got no money. But if I did, I would. But not gonna put a big keister name thang like other people do. I'd make it artsy and poetsy.

J: So what did you gain from campaign experience, bud?

C: Oh, a long list of things. I met wonderful people and learned from their perspective of things. I sang and danced and had a great time. I stayed out of trouble as I was busy. No drinking and driving, no online dating, no fooling around. I always came home alone after all the parties, you see.

J: I see.

C: So yeah. Most of all, I've become a better person. During my campaign, I treated everyone, the voters, as my queens and kings. Election campaign is like a job application. And the people, they're the employers.

J: Oh.

C: Even after I lost, that attitude of mine, putting everyone and anyone beyond and above me, that humble attitude toward the people, stayed and remained in me. I still treat everyone like they're my bosses. I call that a success, a big win victory.

J: Huh. Good!

C: So yeah. I think I'll keep running every two years or so. I'll run for something. Cuz to me, campaign season is like a party time lol.

J: Wow. So what's in year 2022?

C: I'm thinking, like, U.S. Senate seat.

J: Good luck.

C: Thanks. But in the mean while for next 2 years, I'll crawl back to my closet and keep writing academic articles like I'm doing right now, right here.

J: Best wishes.

C: Thank you! By the way, writing this article is highly therapeutic. It took me two to three weeks to recover from election loss. Writing out helps a lot, fyi. //!-D

b. Why Did He Lost? Reason #1: Name Recognition

There is this English expression, “Dark Horse Candidate[56].” It basically means a lesser Known candidate, probably because it’s his first time to run or he’s relatively new in town.

C: I guess I was like that.

J: A dark horse candidate, ehy?

C: Yeah. I mean, after all, I’ve been in Alaska for 5 years, and in the district I ran in for 4 years. Other candidates have lived here multiple times than I have. I suspect that’s why they got votes multiple times of the votes I got.

J: So you’re saying the number of votes is proportional to the number of years of a candidate’s residency in the district?

C: Roughly.

Let us examine such proposition, mathematically, by bringing our Feelings equation back to life:

$$\mathrm{F}(\mathrm{I}, x, c) = \frac{\mathbf{O}(\mathrm{I}, x) \cdot \mathbf{O}(\mathrm{I}, x, c)}{D(x, c)} = T(x, c) \times \mathbf{O}(I, x) \cdot \mathbf{O}(I, x, c)$$

Let’s say, a citizen *x* and a candidate *c* have known each other for a long time. The two friends in town don’t agree on all issues but they do know each other’s opinions on those issues. The two learned to avoid talking about the issues that they disagree and so when they meet, they talk about only the issues that they agree with, like, golfing or fishing or hunting or hiking or berry picking.

What happens here between the two people is that they decrease the weights of the issue elements in their opinion vectors over the passage of time during their friendship:

$$\mathbf{O}((\mathrm{L}, \mathrm{G}, \mathrm{A}), x) = (-8, +9, -5) \rightarrow (-2, +3, -5)$$

$$\mathbf{O}((\mathrm{L}, \mathrm{G}, \mathrm{A}), c) = (+8, -9, -5) \rightarrow (+2, -3, -5)$$

Meaning, over time, the two friends soften their opinions as they adjust, adapt, and re-calibrate their once strong views about lgbt-ism, gunn-ism, and abortion-ism. They’re both anti-abortion, so they don't change that part of their views, but for the two issues they used to disagree strongly, they toned down their extremities, rounded out their edges so to speak.

---

[56] See https://en.wikipedia.org/wiki/Dark_horse .

So yes, it makes sense that we introduce a time variable t into the Opinion vector function, but we'll leave that to the future occasion, or to other scholars, as the equations we introduced here are just the beginning of things to come. Refinement and improvement of the equations are definite possibilities for later years and generations even.

J: So are you saying you lost because not many people know you?

C: That's one way to look at it.

J: But didn't you say you're kinda a well-known local fixture, like doing pushups with bare hands on a frozen lake's ice and running with Hawaiian t-shirt on in Alaskan winters and what not?

C: Well the thing is only about 15% of 33,000 eligible voters in the district participated in this election.[57] You see, voting is a right, not a duty. When it comes to local elections, in anywhere in the world, not may people participate in voting process. 110 people voted for me and they gave me more credits and blessings I ever deserve. In all honesty, I don't think I know that many people by name, perhaps by face. So I really thank them for taking time to have voted for me. I am humbled.

J: Oh?

C: The thing is, I'm not that social a person. When I go out to clubs, bars, restaurants, I go there alone and meet people there. I don't really hang out with people. I love people and interaction therewith, but I wanna strike balance between people time and lone time. When I'm home, I wanna be alone, relaxed, and I think about political or social issues and come up with solutions. In my mind, I believe I have a solution for every single problem in the world.

J: Oh. Well. Keep on running, I guess.

C: Thanks, buddy. I think I will. I like running //:-)

c. Why Did He Lost? Reason #2: Sympathy and Reciprocity[58]

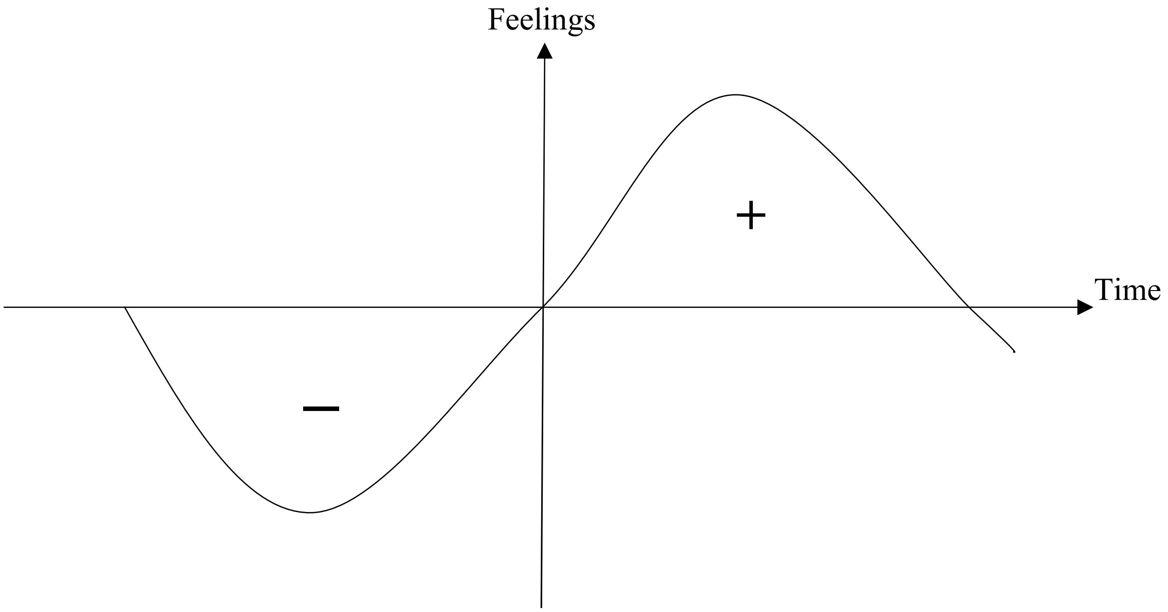
Let us look at the sine curve[59] in trigonometry in 2-dimensional Cartesian coordinate system:

---

[57] See https://www.elections.alaska.gov/results/20PRIM/data/sovc/ElectionSummaryReportRPT20.pdf and https://ballotpedia.org/Alaska_State_Senate_District_D .

[58] See https://en.wikipedia.org/wiki/Reciprocity_%28social_psychology%29 .

[59] The author's apology for the clumsiness of the diagrams in this paper //:-) The diagram represents work-reward model of life. See https://en.wikipedia.org/wiki/Reinforcement#Positive_reinforcement . They call it 'positive reinforcement' in psychology but such is too awkward a term to describe human phenomenon, as we humans are more than machines. We'd rather call it, minus-plus-ism, or minuplusism in short, pronounced as my-new-plusism.



There is this quite universal phenomenon of initiation or ‘hazing’ commonly occurring across time, space, culture, and languages.[60] When a newcomer in a job or in a school comes around, for instance, people with seniority tend to pick on that new kid on the block, giving him some hard time. It is not uncommon to see a candidate lose multiple times before he gets elected, finally.[61]

Perhaps, failure is the price of success. When people see a candidate lose an election, perhaps they will vote for him next time out of sympathy. Perhaps people will reciprocate the candidate’s persistence and perseverance with next election’s votes. This time around, the author ran for an election for the first time, so perhaps it was his turn to fail so he can win next time? We shall see //xD

d. Why Did He Lost? Reason #3: Honesty

J: And you think you lost because you’re too honest?

C: That’s one possibility.

The flipside of that, plus-minus-ism, or pluminusism, pronounced as ploo-mee-nuh-sism. It models the sin-punishment phenomenon. More on that, we will cover those concepts in future academic papers //:-)

[60] See https://en.wikipedia.org/wiki/Initiation and https://en.wikipedia.org/wiki/Hazing .

[61] See https://www.snopes.com/fact-check/abraham-lincoln-failure/ .

J: But didn't they like it when they saw how honest you were during campaign speeches and in radio interviews and newspaper articles you wrote?

C: Yeah, they kindly and generously told me later they appreciated my candor. Some people liked it and some of them voted for me. I got about 2% of the votes, you know.

J: Are you saying 98% of the voters prefer liars? Because what, they themselves are liars? Like, liars like liars, as liars are alike?

C: Ha ha ha ha ha. A good one //:-) I think what might happened is that they found me too shocking.

J: You mean, your hairdo?

C: That, sure. So about 5,500 voters vote in this election in this district. I think most of them knew about me. It's because, the citizens who vote in local elections, they're known as super voters[62]. They're the kind of people who pay attention to local politics.

J: How come?

C: Perhaps they themselves want to run for an office in the future, like I was two years ago. Or perhaps they genuinely find local politics intriguing, like I do. Or they're former local politicians, like I'm not. Or they have friends or family members who are in the race, like I don't.

J: So I get it. It's all- about you, huh? It's just you you you and more you.

C: No.

J: It's just me me me and more me. Dude, that's why you lost. You are so immature. You ain't ready.

C: Oh? You think so, huh.

J: Well, you lost, man. Get over it.

C: I'm over it, I mean, I'm no longer in pain and suffering of election no more. No matter how painful an event once was at the time, as time passes by, you can reminisce with relish. It's all good ole time.

e. Why Did He Lost? Reason #4: Poverty

J: You think you lost cuz you're poor? Come on. Gimme a break, man. I thought you said you're a lawyer.

---

[62] See http://www.political-mail.com/politicalmailblog/super-voters/ .

C: The thing is, these days, there're so many law school graduates, the lawyer labor market is saturated. Over-supply of lawyers depress the price, the lawyer job salary, you see. I make an average Alaskan salary.[63]

J: Is that figure before tax or after tax?

C: I'm not gonna tell you that.

J: Ha ha ha ha ha.

C: The bottom line is, yes, the money I bring in from my lawyer day job is good enough to pay my bills like mortgage, car loan, electricity, insurance, food, gas, vodka, whiskey, cigarettes, potable water, etc. Good thing is, I'm debt-free. My undergrad tuition was paid off with Pell grants, scholarship, and my family members helped me out too, plus kind and generous Wisconsinites granted me in-state tuition status, as I used work in Wisconsin's supermarkets for more than a year while I was out of school back in 1997-1998. My English was too poor to understand classes. So I studied English by memorizing lyrics of Beatles, Beach Boys, BeeGees, Beautiful South, etc. I also turned on subtitles when I watched movies and TVs. My law school tuition was also paid off thanks to GI Bill, yellow ribbon program, and scholarships. My two-year stint at Cornell when I was studying computational biology was also paid off with kind and generous fellowship scholarships.

J: And?

C: And yes, back to the campaign story. After paying my bills in Alaska, I was able to do some extracurricular activities like an intense period of two-month campaigning.

J: So, what's the problem?

C: But money-wise and time-wise, I couldn't afford campaign road signs or mass pamphlet-mailing and stuffs and such.

J: Do you believe that money plays a deterministic role in American democracy?

C: Hmm. Sounds like a loaded question.

J: No, it's a yes or no question. Answer it.

C: … Yes and No. How about that?

J: Explain.

C: I mean, rule by money, there's a term for that. Plutocracy[64]. Democracy is rule by the people. And people is not equal to money.

J: So in your weird opinion, American democracy is heading the wrong way?

---

[63] See https://www.thebalancecareers.com/average-salary-information-for-us-workers-2060808 .

[64] See https://en.wikipedia.org/wiki/Plutocracy .

C: In my humble opinion, American democracy has room to improve.

J: But if you got no money to advertise your campaign, how can people know about you?

C: Good point. As a matter of fact, there are some people who didn't even know I was running while they knew me.

J: You didn't tell them?

C: Not all of them. Cuz, hey, I wanna enjoy my life. I didn't want my political pursuit consume me or engulf my life. I did not want my life to be all about politics. I'm a human being. I refuse to be a political machinery.

J: So. You don't strike me like a person who's gonna become a millionaire any time soon. Or, ever, as a matter of appearance.

C: Ha ha ha ha ha. Oh well.

J: Then what's your plan? How can you win the next election? What, U.S. Senate seat in 2022?

C: Well, I'm writing this paper. Hopefully it takes off and I become famous nationally and internationally. And the fame would come knocking the doors of Alaska.

J: Wait a minute. You are writing this paper for your political bet, as if an academic article is a dirt cheap chip on a dirty political gambling table?

C: Yes.

J: I thought you were a good man. I now think that you are too calculating a figure. What's that word…. Yes, self-serving. You're a self-serving person.

C: Well, think of it this way. A businessman sell things to make money. But when sells things, he's serving his customers, clients, patrons, consumers. Business goes both ways. It's an exchange. It's a two-way street. Politics works the same way. Why do some people wanna be politicians? I think they want the fame factor. They wanna be on spotlights, lime lights, they want attention, they want a crowd who would listen to their long lecture with no time limit.

J: No. No. Maybe you. Just you, man.

C: Maybe so. Then again, I'm the honest one.

J: Self-serving, again.

C: What I'm saying is, this attention-seeking desire and behaviorism of politicians, it's not always a bad thing. It could be a good thing, you see. They do propagate information when they speak or write in public domain. And their high visibility does serve a good public purpose. I'm just saying like it is. After all, we need entertainers in movies and TVs. And they, the actors and models and singers and performers, they're all ADD cases, the Attention Deficit Disorder people. They just crave and crave for more and more attentions from people and they can't get enough of it. Sounds familiar?

J: Politicians are like that? Well, you, a politician-wanna-be, you definitely fall in that category.

C: I never claimed otherwise.

J: Good luck to publication of this paper, Mr.

C: Thank you, Sir. I'll try. But in all honesty, I don't think my chance at peer-reviewed journal publication is any better than my chance at election. I'm having just too much fun writing this, you know. Perhaps that's why I lost the election. I was having way way too much fun running the campaign trail //xD

VII. A Proposal: Fraction Voting System

1. A Requiescence

J: So. You criticize what you call, post- covid/Floyd BLM-ism for their vandalism.

C: Yes.

J: But, don't you think you're doing the same thing, though?

C: Explain, please.

J: I mean, the people in places, they're taking down the statues, renaming places, burning down buildings, spray painting, looting, burglary, arson, theft, felonious crimes, all in the name of BLM-ism, and they get away with all that crimes, because so so many people are doing that crimes in the name of BLM, and there are so many police officers.

C: I hear ya. Prez. Trump, he's too afraid to declare marshal law. I would have. Long time ago.

J: How about vice prez. Joe Biden?

C: Too low energy. It's like, it always boils down to the lesser of two evils. The better of the Dumb and Dumber. We got these two stooges. Trump and Biden. The Dumb and Dumber. Hey ladies and gents. How can I possibly not run for President? Huh? Yes, I am running for president in 2020. Vote for me. Please. You know I am smarter than those two stooges combined //xD

J: Oh well. Thanks for running, dude.

C: Yeah man. We all do try, right? … We do.

2. Introduction

Say, Adam the voter has been a super-voter, having voted in local elections for decades.

But he has been disappointed by performances of his elected officials. So this time around, Adam decides to run for an office himself. He'd go to places where there are a lot of people and introduce himself like so:

> *Madam, I'm Adam.*[65]

The problem is, other candidates like Brian, Charlie, and Daniel, they've been running for decades already and it's first time running for Adam. Let's hear it from one Mr. Adam.

> *"Hmm. I think people know I'm smarter than all other candidates combined.*
>
> *Only if we tweak the voting system a little bit so that I win this election."*

Would it be a voting fraud then?

> *"Oh no. It would be the next evolutionary step forward in our voting system.*
>
> *I guarantee it. You will like it. In fact, you will love it."*

Well, Mr. Adam is talking like a pillow salesman but let's examine what his big idea is about.

3. An Illustrative Scenario

Adam knows that: Brian has a daughter named Brigette; Charlie's wife is Celine;

Daniel's father is Derek. Then Adam goes,

> *"I know Brigette knows I am smarter than her Dad, Brian. Celine also knows I'd make a better public servant than her husband, Charlie. Derek surely knows I have a superior leadership skill than his son, Daniel.*
>
> *"But alas, these voters will vote for her father, her husband, his son and not me.*

---

[65] See https://en.wikipedia.org/wiki/Palindrome . Palindrome is a word or sentence that is symmetric. "Madam, I'm Adam" is an example thereof, as reading it backward and forward spells the same.

I call that voters' nepotism[66]*."*

The problem that Adam is observing is this. For the sake of argument, let us go along with Adam's logic. Say, Adam is indeed the most qualified candidate, if not the most eligible bachelor in town. Hypothetically, Adam is the smartest of all candidates with the most awesome wisdom and intellect and moral uprightness and the utmost character and wonderful social skill, the perfect role model material.

> *"That much is true. But the thing is, I'm kinda lone buck, lone wolf type, you see. I spend time thinking about issues, solving problems. I believe I have a solution for every problem in the world. And yes, I believe we can save the world together. But I will need your vote. If not, at least I need a new voting system in which I would get elected."*

In Adam's world, other candidates spend too much time shaking hands, getting campaign donations and spending that money to advertise their campaigns.

> *"Sure, they, other candidates, they'll make a lot of friends. That's all they do. Making friends. So they would vote for them. I call that voters' cronyism*[67]*. When they're busy making friends, I'm busy thinking, coming up with solutions. That's why I spend a lot of time by myself. To study, to learn, to think, to solve problems, at least in theory, in my head and on my notebooks."*

Let us look at Mr. Adam's proposed voting system, the Fractional voting system.

4. The Plot Thickens

Whether the proposed new voting system is a better system, we will let the readers be the judges. Since the author lost the election, he's not a legislator and he got no power. The idea presented here is only a proposal, a suggestion //!-)

---

[66] See https://en.wikipedia.org/wiki/Nepotism .

[67] See https://en.wikipedia.org/wiki/Cronyism .

It goes like this:[68]

	Adam	Brian	Charlie	Daniel
Brigette:	30%	70%		
Celine:	30%		70%	
Derek:	30%			70%
Total:	90%	70%	70%	70%

"See? I win! How? Because, well first of all, in our new voting system, no candidates' votes get counted. It's because, candidates are biased parties. Like in a trial, judges recuse themselves when they're related to the plaintiff or defendant, because then they can't be impartial judges of the case.

"So we'll exclude candidates from voting. But, we can't exclude their friends and families, because if we do, no one will vote for local elections //xD"

In the example above, each of the three candidates' family members cast 70% of his or her one vote to his or her family member candidate; and he or she cast 30% of his or her one vote to the one Adam, whom they know to be "the" smarter and better candidate than their family member candidates. And Adam wins.

5. Fractional Voting Theorem

Alright, kind ladies and gentlemen. Math time //:-D

Proposition) Let x represent the percentage of a vote that a voter will assign to a dark horse candidate, Adam. And let n represent the number of voters. Then, in order for Adam to win the election, the following inequality[69] should satisfy:

---

[68] Although the author came up with the idea independently, after one google search, he now realizes that a similar idea already existed. See https://www.recruiter.com/i/fractional-voting-for-presidential-and-job-candidates/ .

[69] See https://en.wikipedia.org/wiki/Inequality_(mathematics) .

$$x > \frac{100}{n+1}$$

Foundation) For simplicity, let's say Daniel dropped out of race for some reason and Derek won't vote as a result. So Adam is competing with more established candidates, Brian and Charlie. There are only two voters: Brigette and Celine. For Adam to win, what would be the smallest percentage of two voters to be given to Adam?

If we keep the Adam's percentage the same as before:

	Adam	Brian	Charlie
Brigette:	30%	70%	
Celine:	30%		70%
Total:	60%	70%	70%

Then Adam will lose and the election will be a tie, necessitating a run-off election between and Brian and Charlie. But the goal is, to come up with a scenario so that our poor dark horse candidate Mr. Adam wins. So let us manipulate the numbers a bit. It starts sounding like a real naughty and suspicious dealing. But hey, we're doing math. It's harmless //:-)

Let's say, Adam gets 4% boost from the voters, like so:

	Adam	Brian	Charlie
Brigette:	34%	66%	
Celine:	34%		66%
Total:	68%	66%	66%

In this schema of things, Adam barely defeats his opponents by 2%. The question is, what would be a generic formula for all this? We're gonna have to resort to a mathematically precise proof[70] for this.

---

[70] See https://en.wikipedia.org/wiki/Mathematical_proof .

Proof) Say, for simplicity, all voters assign x percent to Adam and "100 - x" percent to their family member candidates. And there are n voters. For Adam to win, the summation of x percentages should be bigger than "100 - x" percentage that other candidates got. That is to say:

$$x \times n > 100 - x$$

$$x \times (n + 1) > 100$$

Therefore,

$$x > \frac{100}{n+1}$$

Q.E.D.[71]

But, what if there are, say, 100 friends and family members of each of 'other' candidates of Brian, Charlie, Daniel? Even so, the 300 of them will cast 70% to their familial/friendly candidates, and they will also cast 30% of the votes to Adam. So the 300 multiplying factor cancel out, because it appears on both sides of the equation or inequality aforementioned. In mathematical modeling[72], simplification is the key. Because otherwise, it becomes to complex and insurmountable //!-)

6. What It Means

We posited that our current democracy system in America is far from perfect, that it has plenty of rooms to improve upon. For example, money plays too big a role in American democracy. In the Fractional voting system proposed above, a dark horse candidate, who devotes his time in studying and coming up with solutions, a candidate who emphasizes in intelligence and knowledge, will have a better chance of winning an election. Let us examine how it works. By the numbers.

Say, in a Presidential primary election of Republican or Democratic Party, there are typically hundreds of registered Presidential candidates, the author being one of them[73]. Let's say, for the ease of calculation, there are 100 candidates. One of them is our good ole Adam, who has no family members. As for 99 candidates, each of them has 1 family member. Then how much percentage does Adam need from the voters, in order to win the Presidential Republican Primary election? Let's do the numbers:

---

[71] See https://en.wikipedia.org/wiki/Q.E.D. .

[72] See https://en.wikipedia.org/wiki/Mathematical_model .

[73] See https://ballotpedia.org/Presidential_candidates,_2020 .

$$x > \frac{100}{n+1}$$

$$x > \frac{100}{99+1}$$

$$x > 1$$

For example, if Adam gets 2% of votes from 99 family members of the 99 candidates, then Adam's total percentage votes will be 2% times 99, or 198%, which amounts approximately 2 votes. Other candidates only got 98% of one vote each, which is about 1 vote. So magically, Adam wins. Is this an anomaly? Let's hear it from Mr. Adam the candidate:

> *"I don't think so. I think it's the way it should be. A voter is a person. S/he is not some binary computer machine. A voter's judgment on candidates is not like yes or no answer, it's not black and white like that.*
>
> *"The Fractional voting system is a more accurate reflection of voters' judgments on candidates. There is no rhyme of reason why an electoral system should force voters to choose one and only one candidate on the ballot."*

The author happens to agree with Mr. Adam on this. Fractional voting system mitigates the undesirable effect of voter cronyism and voter nepotism. By the same token, Fractional voting system gives a poor but smart candidate a chance to win.

7. What a Ballot Would Look Like in Fractional Voting System

Again, the author independently conceived the Fractional voting system and was surprised how a very similar line of logic was already discovered and discussed and in pre-existence somewhere in the web[74] //:-0

One way to implement the proposed system would be to make a ballot look like an online survey, like rate candidates from 0 to 5:

---

[74] See, again, https://www.recruiter.com/i/fractional-voting-for-presidential-and-job-candidates/ .

	0	1	2	3	4	5
Adam:		x				
Brian:				x		
Charlie:						
Daniel:			x			

Say, a voter has no confidence in Charlie but he likes Brian somewhat, Daniel a little, Adam a tiny bit (no vote on a candidate counts as zero). Then, we can easily calibrate the result above into percentage like so:

Adam: 1 / (1+2+3) = 1 / 6 ≈ 0.17 = 17 / 100 = 17%

Brian: 3 / (1+2+3) = 3 / 6 = 0.5 = 50 / 100 = 50%

Adam: 2 / (1+2+3) = 2 / 6 ≈ 0.33 = 33 / 100 = 33%

Total: 6 / (1+2+3) = 6 / 6 = 1 = 100 / 100 = 100%

So yes, there is no voting fraud in this scheme of things. Numbers add up, and yes, it is still one-person-one-vote system like before. Fractional voting system is a superior system to the existing one, because it gives voters more degree of freedom, where a voter is 'free' to vote for multiple candidates. Not only that, a voter can give more weights to some candidates, while giving less or zero weights to other candidates. Fractional voting system is the most accurate reflection of voters' judgments on candidates and the author believes it's the next forward step in the evolution of democracy, not just in America, but in the whole wide world.

Epilogue[75]

Hello everyone, thank you for your kind and generous readership //:-D We hope you enjoyed the show. Our next article to write and publish will be titled, "Politics in Science." There, we'll discuss the interaction between politics and science. Yes, there, we will present the disproofs of special and general relativity theories by Mr. Einstein and we'll discuss why Mr. Einstein's faulty theory has been condoned for so long. We'll also scientifically examine, and politically analyze, topics like climate change, covid-19, feminism, lgbt-ism, tattoo-ism, piercing-ism, marijuana-ism, obesity, etc. And yes, the abortion issue too.[76]

---

[75] This paper was started being written on 8/25/2020, a week after the author found out he lost the primary election on 8/18/2020. It was finished being written on 9/7/2020, the Labor Day Monday //:-)

Thank you for your time and see you later, kind and generous ladies and gentlemen //:-)

---

[76] A hotly debated topic this is. It involves politics, science, and …. Yeah…. The religion….. Stay tuned, folks //!-)

Inertial Symmetry Axiom Theory[77]

Huhnkie Lee[78]

The incompatibility between Galilean Inertia and Einsteinian Special Relativity is discussed. Arguments are made in favor of Galilean assumptions. Assuming Galilean propositions are true, a disproof of Einsteinian Special Relativity Theory is presented

Prologue

Hello everyone, thank you for your kind and generous readership //:-D This is an academic article, but I will keep it as entertaining as possible. Please enjoy-

I. Galilean Proposition

1. Relative Velocity

A proposition is a term in first-order logic, which started in ancient Greek philosophy and later became integrated into mathematics in late 1800s and early 1900s.[79] A proposition is a statement that can be either true or false.[80] In other words, a proposition is a Boolean constant or variable with a binary value of either 0 or 1.

What Mr. Galileo proposed in his magnum opus that a man on a boat in the middle of a calm ocean cannot tell whether his boat is standing still or moving with a constant speed.[81] Furthermore, according to Mr. Galileo, two boats in the ocean cannot tell who is moving with a constant speed and who is standing still.[82]

---

[77] This paper is dedicated to the author's family members and friends who also played parental figures to him in being there for him when no one else was, who corrected him when he was wrong, and who taught him life lessons and everlasting wisdoms.

[78] A lawyer by trade, a mathematician by hobby, a U.S. Army veteran by record, a former computer programmer, a prior PhD candidate in computational biology, a former actor/writer/director/indie-filmmaker/background-music-composer.

[79] See https://en.wikipedia.org/wiki/First-order_logic .

[80] See https://en.wikipedia.org/wiki/Proposition .

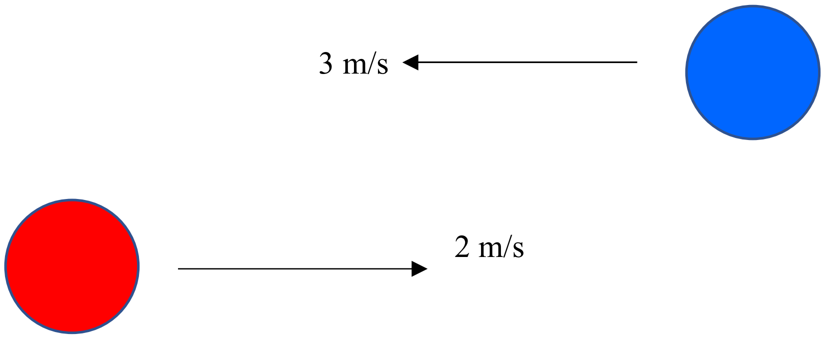
[81] See https://en.wikipedia.org/wiki/Galilean_invariance and https://en.wikipedia.org/wiki/Galileo%27s_ship .

[82] See https://en.wikipedia.org/wiki/Relative_velocity .

Let us assume that there are two astronauts in the space, far away from any stars or planets. The two men[83] have flashlights and are in a big spaceship with lights turned off and window curtains drawn. They are in complete darkness except for their respective flashlights.

In the universe, there is no such a thing as sense of direction. There is no up or down, no east or west, no left or right. In an empty space, there is only void. North or south, like north pole with earth magnetism or the northern star, such sense of direction is nothing but man-made concept to guide travels. They're conventions for convenience' sake.

To preclude the notion of left and right, let us modify our hypothetical. Let's say, out in the space, there are two billiard balls with no markings. One is red, the other is blue:



Now, the blue ball is moving to the left at 3 m/s, and the red one is moving to the right at 2 m/s, according to a static observer.

In the red ball's perspective, it is as if the blue ball is moving west at 5 m/s. In blue ball's eyes, the red ball is moving eastwards at 5 m/s. This is the concept of relative velocity in classical mechanics by Mr. Galileo and Mr. Newton.

Galileo's universe is symmetric. The red ball's observation is that the blue ball is moving

at 5 m/s to the left. The blue ball's observation is that the red ball is moving at 5 m/s to the right. And it makes sense.

Let's go to the space again. Out there in an empty space, in a big space ship with the

drawn curtains blocking external lights from stars, with internal lights turned off, the two fluorescent balls are floating. There is no sense of directions. The two spherical balls can only see each other and nothing else, as they're in complete darkness. The only thing the red ball can observe is whether the blue ball is moving toward the red ball or away from the red ball with constant speed.

---

[83] Please note that the author is a male and that is why he uses male pronouns, because it's easier for him. The author is not a sexist or misogynist //!-) The author will not use expressions like "he or she," "him or her," "his or her," "himself or herself," etc., because such gender neutral expression is too bulky, cumbersome, tedious, inefficient, unnecessary, and unattractive. So in this paper, a male pronoun is used to denote a generic person, like back in the good ole days. The author is a male and that's why it is easier for him to use male pronouns from a male perspective of things. If an author is a female and if she exclusively uses female pronouns, this author would understand and raise no objections. //:-)

Out in the universe, there is no such a thing as an absolute velocity. It because velocity of an object can only be defined relative to another object. In the empty universe, there is no such a thing as an absolutely static observer. It is because one object, if it is all alone, cannot tell the difference between a constant non-zero velocity and a zero velocity.

2. The Sun and the Earth

When Mr. Galileo said the earth revolves around the sun, his theory was deemed a heresy.[84] By now, nearly four centuries later, most people agree with Mr. Galileo. But, now, in this paper, let us conduct a Cartesian inquiry.[85] Was Mr. Galileo right? Was Mr. Galileo more correct than Christians and Catholics of his time who thought that the sun revolves around the earth? Please, let us keep an open mind.

If we posit that there is no such a thing as an absolutely static observer in the universe, if velocity of an object can only be defined in relation to another object, then, the following proposition ensues:

The earth revolving around the sun is equivalent to the sun revolving around the earth.

Does the earth spins itself once a day, or does the rest of the universe rotates around the one planet earth?[86] In this paper, our position is that the two propositions are equivalent. In other words, yes, both Mr. Galileo and Catholics of his time were correct. Or, they're both incorrect in thinking that the two propositions are incompatible.

Let us take an educated guess at some reasons why Catholics in 1600s thought that the sun revolves around the earth. Well, first of all, it is more convenient to think that way, even today. If you look at the sun, with sunglasses on, of course, the sun looks so small. It is about the size of a quarter, a coin. It seems that way, to our eyes. But, scientists like Mr. Galileo knew that the sun is actually a very big star, by far bigger than the planet earth. Perhaps that's why Mr. Galileo and other scientists thought that the small earth moves around the big sun, because it's easier to think that way. Well, it's more efficient if a small object moves and a big object stands still. It will cost less energy that way.

---

[84] See https://en.wikipedia.org/wiki/Dialogue_Concerning_the_Two_Chief_World_Systems .

[85] See https://en.wikipedia.org/wiki/Cartesianism .

[86] Of course, rotation or spin isn't exactly inertial movement because the moving body is changing its direction though its speed may be the same. See https://en.wikipedia.org/wiki/Rotation .

Plus, the sun has other planets too. If we think that the sun and other planets and the entire universe rotates around the earth, things become rather chaotic to think about. Scientists want to model the universe in the simplest fashion. Such economic attitude of scientists is known as the principle of Occam's razor.[87]

But, the issue of efficiency aside, let's find the truth. Let us be more than a scientist or an engineer or an economist. Let us think like a philosopher. Let us be Cartesians for a moment.

We know for sure that the earth is not flat, as satellites have taken pictures of the earth for decades. But, the earth does look flat to us. When you look around, the earth does look flat indeed. The case in point is, the flat earth hypothesis and the round earth thesis, they are not as incompatible as one may think. The earth is flat, locally, and is round, globally. Flat earth model is a very good local model. As scientists and mathematicians, we know the straight line approximation of a curve is the foundation of Newtonian calculus.

Now, let us look above. Stars and suns and galaxies, they do seem to rotate around the earth. And perhaps they do. The thing is, the proposition that the universe revolves around the earth, and the proposition that the earth revolves around the sun, they're equivalent. It is because velocity can only be defined in relative terms between two or more objects. There is no such a thing as an absolutely static object in the universe. It's not like the sun is standing still and everything else moves around it. It's that planets are moving around the sun, relative to the sun. Indeed, astronomers know that the entire solar system is revolving around the center of our galaxy.[88]

3. Mr. Galileo and Eastern Philosophy

Basically, Mr. Galileo is saying that there is no absolute. Adam standing still and Bob coming toward Adam is equivalent to Adam coming toward Bob who is standing still. Adam coming to Bob at 3 m/s and Bob coming to Adam at 7 m/s is no different from Adam coming to Bob at 8 m/s and Bob coming to Adam at 2 m/s. All those scenarios are indistinguishable, as they all end up having 10 m/s of relative velocity. In Galileo's universe, velocity can be defined only in relative terms between two objects. There is no absolute stillness, there is no absolute movement when it comes to constant velocity, i.e., inertial movements.

We can expand Galilean ideas and come up with a paradoxical philosophy in the fashion of eastern philosophy.[89] How about this:

---

[87] See https://sco.wikipedia.org/wiki/Occam%27s_razor .

[88] See https://earthsky.org/astronomy-essentials/milky-way-rotation .

[89] See https://studybuddhism.com/en/advanced-studies/lam-rim/vipashyana/commentary-on-the-heart-sutra-dr-berzin/form-is-emptiness-emptiness-is-form and

Every point in the universe is a center of the universe, and

No point in the universe is the center of the universe.

In this world, there are many people. Every one of us thinks, “I am the center of the universe. Everyone else’s lives revolve around mine.” Such egocentrism is a natural thing. Egocentrism neither bad nor good. It is just the way it is. When we are on earth and look at the sky, the sun and the moon coming up and going down, we do regard them as revolving around the earth. Is that wrong? No. Mr. Galileo said it was wrong to think that way. Perhaps Mr. Galileo’s idea was not relativistic enough. In this paper, we go further than Mr. Galileo in his line of relativism. We posit that the sun revolving around the earth, and the earth revolving around the sun, they’re equivalent and there’s no way to tell the difference.

II. Einsteinian Proposition

1. Special Relativity[90]

For our purpose,[91] it suffices to know that special relativity theory says that time slows down when a man travels with a non-zero speed, compared to the state when he is standing still.[92] We will disprove this time dilation theory, rather informally. We will use the technique known as proof by counter example.[93]

a. Time Dilation

According to Mr. Einstein, time slows down when a person moves around. Say, Adam is moving fast eastwards, and Bob is standing still. According to Bob’s observation, **when Bob’s clock shows 100 seconds passing by, Adam’s clock is showing only 50 seconds having passed by.** This is the first scenario.

---

http://dic.tvbuddha.org/s1/view.htm?vtype=en&search_cate=S&page=6&num=2288&PHPSESSID=1cea9b177689f3ce53fad3e1b3677f20 .

[90] See https://en.wikipedia.org/wiki/Special_relativity .

[91] By the way, the author admits his knowledge in physics is about non-physics major’s undergraduate level //:-)

[92] See https://en.wikipedia.org/wiki/Time_dilation .

[93] See https://en.wikibooks.org/wiki/Mathematical_Proof/Methods_of_Proof/Counterexamples . To disprove a theory is a lot easier than to prove a theory, because all you need to disprove a theory is one counter example that contradicts the theory. It is more likely than not that the disproofs presented here may not gain popular support in contemporary physics community, but such is irrelevant. As scientists, our job is to find the truth, not to persuade it. Persuasion is a politician’s job //!-)

The next scenario is as follows. Adam is standing still and Bob is moving fast westwards, as fast as Adam did in the first scenario. Then, when 100 seconds passed by in Adam's clock, Adam is seeing Bob's clock having passed by 50 seconds. Let's say, Bob is still moving westward, and wait for 50 more seconds and then reads Adam's clock. In Bob's observation, **Bob's clock is showing 100 seconds Adam's clock would show 200 seconds.**

These two scenarios may not convince the readers as a disproof-by-counterexample of Special Relativity Theory. The reason is that the readers may not accept Galilean proposition of relativistic symmetry as an axiom. An axiom is an assumed proposition that is so self-evidently true such that it does not require to be proved. It is simply assumed to be true. Galilean assumption states that Adam moving eastward at 10 m/s and Bob standing still is equivalent to Bob moving at 10 m/s westward when Adam is standing still.

But from Mr. Einstein's point of view, the two scenario must result in difference. The reason is that Mr. Einstein assumes that there is such a thing as an absolute stillness and there is such a thing as an absolute non-zero velocity. In this way, Mr. Einstein's Special Relativity theory has a fundamental absolutivity in it, an absolutivistic assumption.

b. By the Numbers

We have been using English to describe the scenarios and it seems quite confusing. Let us illustrate the same scenarios using numbers and diagrams this time.

In Special Relativity, there is this concept of Lorentz Factor, γ ("Gamma," a Greek letter). We will keep things simple here and not write out the formula.[94] For ease of illustration, we will define λ as the inverse of λ ("Lambda," another Greek letter[95]):

$$\lambda = 1 / \gamma = (1 - v^2 / c^2)^{0.5}$$

For our purpose, it suffices us to know that:

$$0 \leq \lambda \leq 1$$

That is, λ is a fraction between 0 and 1.

Now, let us come up with a nice notational convention. Lowercase "t" refers to the time of a moving person. Uppercase "T" refers to the time of a static person. t_A means Adam's time when Adam's moving. Likewise, T_B means Bob's time when Bob is standing still. In the first scenario, Adam is moving to the right with speed *v* and Bob is standing still.

---

[94] See https://en.wikipedia.org/wiki/Lorentz_factor .

[95] As a side note, the author is a Christian Republican conservative. Accordingly, there is no pro-LGBT activism in this paper.

t_A

Adam ------> *v* m/s

Bob

T_B

Please forgive the crudity of the diagram by the author //xD Anyways. In this first scenario, according to Mr. Einstein, time dilation happens in Adam's clock. Bob observes Adam's clock slowing down like so:

$$t_A = \lambda \times T_B = 0.5 \times T_B$$

Adam's moving fast eastwards, so time slows down by half. **When Bob's stop watch reads 100 seconds, Adam's stopwatch reads 50 seconds.** That's scenario #1.

Now, the scenario #2 is as follows. Bob's moving leftward and Adam is standing still, standing tall:

T_A

Adam

v m/s <------Bob

t_B

Then it follows:

$t_B = \lambda \times T_A = 0.5 \times T_A$

When Adam's stopwatch says 100 seconds, Bob's stopwatch says 50 seconds. So Bob moves along to the left 50 more seconds, to make it 100 seconds in his stopwatch. But by then **when Bob's stopwatch says 100 seconds, Adam's stopwatch says 200 seconds.** In summary, we have:

Scenario #1: $t_A = 50$, $T_B = 100$

Scenario #2: $T_A = 200$, $t_B = 100$

This way, Mr. Einstein's universe is asymmetric, unlike Mr. Galileo's universe.

One question to you, our dear readers. Whose universe makes more sense to you. We understand Mr. Einstein's version of things are by far more mainstream and majoritarian in this day and age of the year 2020.[96] But besides whose world view is more popular and hip, let us be Cartesians[97] and be independent thinkers. Does it really make sense to you to make such a distinction? Like, who is Bob and who is Adam, who is moving left and who is moving right?

Assume that Adam and Bob are out in the universe where there is nobody but Adam and Bob as two astronauts inside a space ship with windows all curtained and lights turned off. Adam has a digital stopwatch in red light, and Bob has the same kind of stopwatch in blue light. Say, Adam is conservative and he's moving to the right, Bob is a liberalist and he's moving to the left. Then even if they're moving in constant velocities, there're qualitative differences in their political directionalities.

But, they're in space without gravitation and they can see no starts as curtains are drawn and they can't see anything as lights are off. They can only see each other's clock. Out there in the dark space ship, there is no sense of direction. What's left and what's right? Of course they're humans with left and right arms so they can tell Adam is on Bob's left and Adam's moving towards Bob's right. But what if they're not humans but two fluorescent spherical billiard balls, like one red Republican ball and one blue Democratic ball? Then, there is no sense of what is up and what is down, what is forward and backward, what is left and what is right.

Out there in an empty space in the universe, there is no north, no south. There is no such a thing as an absolute direction. And according to Mr. Galileo at least, there is no distinction between a constant velocity and stillness. Is this too philosophical? If you compare quotes from Mr. Galileo and Mr. Einstein, you may find Mr. Galileo's quotes more philosophically profound and authentic-sounding than those of Mr. Einstein. Well, at least the author found that way //!-)

---

[96] As of writing this part of the article, it's 9/14/2020, 8:10 pm, Alaska Time, about two months before 2020 general election.

[97] Not to be confused with Kardasians. The author has no idea what that TV show is about //xD

III. Galilean and Einsteinian Relativities Compared

1. According to Mr. Galileo

We briefly covered the topic earlier but this time, we will review it again lol. Let us

start by establishing a nicely intuitive notational convention. Let's say, both Adam and Bob are boaters on a lake and they're floating with constant velocities relative to the lakeshore. $V_A{}^B$ denotes velocity of Bob relative to Adam. Say, Oz is standing still on the lakeshore, being a "static" observer relative to the earth. Then the following equation holds true:

$$V_A{}^B = V_O{}^B - V_O{}^A$$

On the lake, there are only Adam and Bob. They can move in 2-dimensional ways relative to each other. But for now, let us focus on 1-dimensional relative movements. Then, we can assign eastward direction as positive, and westward direction as negative. For instance, Oz observes Bob going east at 5 m/s and Adam going west at 3 m/s. Then,

$$V_A{}^B = V_O{}^B - V_O{}^A = 5 – (-3) = 5 + 3 = 8$$

$$V_B{}^A = V_O{}^A - V_O{}^B = (-3) - 5= -8$$

Let us assume that Adam and Bob got red and blue flashlights respectively and they got compasses. They're sailing on a star-less, moonless night on a lake whose shore has no light posts of any kind. So they can see only each other and they move along one west-east line. What the first of above equations tells us is that in Adam's perspective, Bob is moving east at 8 m/s. The second equation say that in Bob's point of view, Adam is moving west at 8 m/s.

Why does Bob think Adam is moving? Because Bob is egocentric like anyone else. Likewise, Adam thinks not that Adam himself is moving away from Bob, but that Bob is moving away from Adam. It is analogous to our collective egocentrism when we look at the sky: we think that we are standing still in the universe and that it is the sun, the moon, the stars that rises from the eastern horizon and sets over the western horizon.

Why do we think so, even 'feel' that way? It's because it's easier to think that way. It is easier for us that we are at the center of the universe. Ladies and gentlemen, egocentrism is neither wrong nor right. It's just the way we are. It's not just us as a matter of fact. Consider our dear reader's dog or pet cat. Do you think that your dog thinks you are the center of the universe?

The author begs to differ. In the dog's point of view, you work him. The dog doesn't work, you do. You work and bring food to the dog. You work for your dog. That's how your dog sees you. In the kind canine's mind, he is the center of the universe and everyone, including you, revolve around him. Egocentrism is a natural phenomenon common to all beings in the universe.

2. According to Mr. Einstein

In the previous section, we assumed the man on the shore, Oz, then we let him

exit the scene. Such is not allowed in Mr. Einstein's postulate. Einsteinian Special Relativity assumes the existence of an absolutely static observer. In this sense, Special Relativity isn't exactly about relativity, but is more about absolutivity. According to Mr. Einstein, there is such a thing as an absolutely static object, and thus, there is such a thing as an absolute velocity. The author argues that this is the beginning of the errors in his Special Relativity theory.

Our dear readers, if acquainted with Special Relativity theory, understand why Mr. Einstein had to slow down the clock of a moving observer. It started with the assumption that Michelson-Morley experiment was correctly designed and measured.[98] In a nutshell, the two physicists try to measure the relative velocity of light, a photon, by setting up a moving observer.[99]

Say, a photon moves east with the speed of light in vacuum, *c*.[100] If an observer moves with one tenth of the speed of *c,* then the observer would measure the speed of the photon as nine tenth of *c.* But the two scientists failed to measure as such. In their experiment, the speed of a photon relative to a moving observer was still *c*.

Other scientists or the author would have suspected that the experimental result might have resulted from technical difficulties back in late 1800s. After all, speed of light is a very big number and the speed of light is a very fast one. Perhaps there was experimental design defect or limitation of equipment of the day back then.

But for some reasons, Mr. Einstein took a different route. Mr. Einstein asked himself,

"What if the speed of light in vacuum is a universal constant?"

Then, Mr. Einstein proceeded as follows:

"Let me assume that the speed of light being c is a law of physics that does not

---

[98] See https://en.wikipedia.org/wiki/Michelson–Morley_experiment .

[99] Please correct the author if he's wrong, as he didn't major in physics, nor very well-read in the area //xD

[100] See https://en.wikipedia.org/wiki/Speed_of_light .

depend on the velocity of an observer moving in a constant velocity. Then we'll see what happens."

Mr. Einstein assumed the correctness of Michelson-Morley experiment, concluding that the relative speed of light will always be *c,* no matter how fast an observer is traveling in the same directing as a photon, behind the photon. For some reasons, Mr. Einstein also assumed that an observer cannot travel faster than the photon. One may say *c* being the maximum speed in the universe is a result of Special Relativity theory, but the author respectfully disagrees. The way that Mr. Einstein derived his formulas and the way he designed his famed thought experiments, smack of an assumption that an observer always trails behind the photon.

3. About Speed of Light

The thing is, the speed of light isn't that absolute a thing.[101] Light is indeed an interesting thing. Let us think about how sound travels. First thing, sound does not travel in vacuum. Sound is a wave phenomenon and it needs a medium to propagate. Sound travels in the air, in water, even in solid like an wooden table. The denser the medium is, the faster sound travels through it.[102] That is, sound travels faster in water than in the air. Sound travels even faster in solid medium than in liquid medium.

Light is the opposite way. First of all, light can travel in vacuum. That's when it's the fastest. When light travels in water, it slows down a bit. When light travels in transparent solid medium like a clear class, it slows down even further. The denser a medium is, the slower light travels.

Now, let us conduct a thought experiment.[103] Say, there are two photons. Photon 1 travels in a long vacuum tube hanging over a clear, still lake. Photon 2 travels just beneath the surface of the lake, under the water. So photon 1 travels east with the formidable speed *c*. Photon 2 travels east too, but it's slower than *c*. Let's call photon 2's speed, *v*. Then what's the relative velocity of photon 1, according to photon 2? Anyone?

…

…

---

[101] See https://en.wikipedia.org/wiki/Refraction .

[102] See https://en.wikipedia.org/wiki/Speed_of_sound .

[103] See https://plato.stanford.edu/entries/thought-experiment/ . Though not the first one who did it, Mr. Einstein contributed to humanity greatly by popularizing the practice of thought experiment and the author fully appreciate such contribution //:-)

…

According to Mr. Einstein, photon 1's velocity relative to photon 2 should still be *c* because photon 2 will experience time dilation. But, does this seem right to the reader, the author wonders?

The thing is, light is not the only thing that can travel in vacuum. A billiard spaceship can too. Let us conduct yet another thought experiment. Say, out there in space, we construct a tunnel filled with water. A submarine travels in that water with constant speed with constant consumption of fuel to run the propeller, with the speed of 10 m/s. Next to it, a spaceship is traveling in the same direction in vacuum, with a faster speed, 20 m/s. What would be the spaceship's velocity relative to the submarine? Should the submarine's time slow down such that the relative speed of the spaceship be still 20 m/s?

The point is, we are questioning Mr. Einstein's assumption that there is something special, even so absolute, about light. According to Mr. Einstein, the vacuum speed of light is an absolute law of physics. Again, his Special Relativity is more about absolutivity, not relativity.

After all, light is special indeed. In ancient days, some cultures worshiped the sun as deity.[104] Even Mr. Jesus of the New Testament in Bible was very fond of light.[105] But, we're doing science here, not religion. Is it a desirable attitude for a scientist to give light a special treatment? Is it scientific to 'deify' light, to elevate light's speed to the status of an absolute law of physics, so absolute that even the time has to slow down to accommodate it? Is it out of a scientific mindset to subjugate time and space under the dominion of Light the Absolute? Should time slow down and space contract because what, the Light is the King? Well, it doesn't quite sound like a science anymore, does it folks? //xD

4. Vector Addition of Velocity

Let us recall an airport experience. They have the horizontal escalator so that people can walk on that conveyor-belt-like contraption and get to their gates faster, to catch their flights. When you walk on that "moving walkway",[106] you look at others walking in the same direction, who are not using the moving walkway, probably because they're not in a hurry. And their speed is slower than yours, because they didn't get the boost in speed of the moving walkway. This is the concept of vector addition of velocity.

For instance, assume that the moving walkway is going at 3 m/s. Both Adam and Bob walks at 2 m/s. Then, Adam walking in the moving walkway is going at 5 m/s, according to

---

[104] See https://en.wikipedia.org/wiki/Ra .

[105] See https://www.biblegateway.com/passage/?search=matthew%205:14-16&version=NIV .

[106] See https://en.wikipedia.org/wiki/Moving_walkway .

Charlie, who is sitting at an airport café, observing Adam and Bob. Charlie also observes Bob walking on ordinary floor of the airport, going in the same direction as Adam, at 2 m/s. Of course, Bob is observing Adam going at 3 m/s (3 = 5 – 2).

Now, let us think of two photons. Adam and Bob are amateur experimental physicists and they are on a straight country road at night. Bob is safely on a roadside, standing still, holding a flashlight. Adam is behind bob and he is walking toward Bob and he will keep walking past Bob. Both of their flashlights are off, but there are stars moon in the sky, so they can see their surroundings. Adam's speed of walking is 2 m/s as before. Both Adam and Bob are pointing their flashlights forward, in the direction of Adam's walking.

The plan is this. At the moment when Adam passes Bob, they both turn on the flashlight and then turn it right off. Now, the question is as follows: what would be the speed of Adam's flashlight's photon? We know Bob's flashlight's photon will have speed of *c* almost, because they're not in space and photon slows down when there is air. But, let's say it's still *c* for simplicity's sake. Let's call Adam's photon, photon A and Bob's photon, photon B. The question is, what would be photon A's speed according to Bob, who is standing still?

Ladies and gentleman, we introduce you a man of household name, the single most famous scientist of all time, a man who needs not an introduction, Mr. Albert Einstein-

E: Mr. Author, thank you for having me. But you don't have a very good understanding of my special relativity.

A: It's a great honor to have you with us, Mr. Einstein. Please, shed some light upon the subject.[107]

E: Photon A's speed will not be *c* + 2 m/s. Oh no. We can't do that. No one shall surpass the speed of light. That is not allowed.

A: You mean length contraction, Sir?

E: Yeah, dude. Length contraction. Because Adam is moving with 2 m/s, in silent and static Bob's observation, Adam's photon is traveling slow. So Bob observes that Adam's photon and Bob's photon is moving with the same speed, *c*. Problem solved. Paradox resolved.

A: Rebellion prevented?

E: … What are you talking about?!

A: lol, just kidding, Sir. No offense.

E: No. Seriously, I take offense off of what you just said. Are you saying I'm trying to defend my special relativity? Hey man, that's not how science works. Scientists are the priests in the temple of the truth. We're not lawyers, politicians, or activists. We're purely objective minds.

---

[107] Pun very well intended, of course //!-)

Son, you joke too much. It's time to get serious. You need to keep studying my special relativity, rather than questioning it. Silence your questions. Learn.

A: Thank you for the advice, Mr. Einstein.

//xD

5. An Experimental Design

They say, the fastest airplane can travel at 3,530 km per hour.[108] Well, in our experiment,

we'll use a cheaper airplane to save American taxpayers' money. Say, we use an airplane that can fly at 1,000 km/h. They also say, a satellite's altitude is about 790 km above the earth.[109] The earth's diameter is about 12,756 km.[110] Then, let's find a spot where a satellite is positioned diagonally, such that it is 1,000 km away from our one Bob, who is standing still with a laser pointer.

Let's further assume that our one Adam went to a flight school and got a jet pilot license. Adam's jet is equipped with a laser pointer as well. The speed of light is about 10^9 km/h. Adam is flying the jet at 10^3 km/h. Like in the previous experiment, both Adam and Bob shoot out laser beams at the satellite that is 10^3 km away from them, when Adam's jet passes by Bob. It won't be safe for Bob being next to a flying jet, but please rest assured. This is a thought experiment //!-)

So let us do the numbers, using the good ole school Galilean relativity framework:

Light Speed = 10^9 km/h

Jet Speed = 10^3 km/h

Distance between Satellite and Bob/Adam's Point of Laser Shooting = 10^3 km

Time for Bob's Laser to Reach Satellite = Distance / Light Speed

= 10^3 km / (10^9 km/h)

= 10^{-6} hour = $3{,}6 \times 10^{-3}$ seconds

Time for Adam's Laser to Reach Satellite = Distance / (Jet Speed + Light Speed)

---

[108] See https://www.livescience.com/34400-fastest-plane-airplane.html .

[109] See https://earthobservatory.nasa.gov/features/OrbitsCatalog .

[110] See https://www.universetoday.com/15055/diameter-of-earth/ .

$= 10^3 / (10^3 + 10^9)$

$= 1 / (1 + 10^6) \approx 0.999999 \times 10^{-6}$

$= 3.5999964 \times 10^{-3}$ seconds

Time Difference between Adam and Bob's Laser Photons

= Photon B's Time - Photon A's Time

$= 3{,}6 \times 10^{-3}$ seconds - 3.5999964×10^{-3} seconds

$= 0.0000036 * 10^{-3} = 3.6 \times 10^{-9}$ seconds

Of course, Einsteinian Special Relativity will predict that the "Time Difference between Adam and Bob's Laser Photons" will be zero, because Adam's photon will travel right next to Bob's photon, arriving at the satellite sensor at the same time.

The point of this exercise is that the time difference above is so tiny, it falls well under the margin of experimental errors.[111] If we think about it, we rounded up numbers quite a bit. The speed of light, for instance, isn't exactly and conveniently 10^9 km/h. It's more like, 1.07925285×10^9 km/h.[112] And the distance from Bob to Satellite can't possibly be exactly 10^3 km. Even if we pick on object on earth that is 10^3 km away from Bob, the exact distance will be like, $1.0000035470002453 \times 10^3$ km. And of course, the speed of Adam's jet would be more like, $1.0025068300753 \times 10^3$ km/h.

As one can easily see, to experimentally verify whether Mr. Einstein's Special Relativity theory is correct or not, is a matter of existential impossibility, let alone technical difficulty. It simply can't be done. The speed of light is so so fast, the measurable time difference between Galilean time and Einsteinian time will fall under the margin of error. The Michelson-Morley experiment, or any other experimental designs, will encounter the same problem.

The bottom line is, Mr. Einstein's Special Relativity theory is unfalsifiable.[113] At least in Mr. Professor Karl Popper's eyes, Mr. Einstein's Special Relativity theory is not a science, but a science fiction.[114]

---

[111] See https://explorable.com/statistics-margin-of-error/ .
[112] See https://www.unitjuggler.com/convert-speed-from-c-to-kmh.html .
[113] See https://simple.wikipedia.org/wiki/Falsifiability .
[114] See *Albert Einstein and Theory of relativity Full Documentary HD* at https://www.youtube.com/watch?v=Qzm947lBqnE .

IV. Relativity Outside Physics

1. Relativity in Religion

There was this American movie[115] where an interviewer asks a celebrity a question: “Who do you want to have coffee with in heaven?” Then the celebrity answers, “Einstein and Jesus.” We had an imaginary interview with the former. Now, ladies and gentlemen, please welcome the single most famous man in human history- we present you, Mr. Jesus Christ.

J: Son, you better stop writing.

A: … Greetings, Mr. Jesus. Thank you so much for joining us today. Great honor to have you with us, Sir.

J: What do you think you are doing?

A: … ahh.. I’m presenting a disproof of Mr. Einstein’s Special Relativity theory, Sir. It’s been one of my backburner projects, for two decades by now. I think I got it right this time.

J: What?! Oh, I get it. You’re trying to pull off some David vs. Goliath story[116] out of this, huh? You what, you wanna be a Cinderella[117] or something? Some overnight fame sensation stuff?

A: Well. I mean, if I become famous, that’d be nice //:-)

J: Not gonna happen. Sorry. I am the, Mr. Jesus. I know. You won’t make it. So stop trying.

A: Thank you for the comments, Sir.

J: Look, man. David was a Jew. Goliath was a gentile. Einstein was a Jew. You are a gentile. See what I’m saying, accented man?

A: lol, thank you for noticing my Asian accent, Sir //:-)

J: What I’m saying is, I like Einstein.

A: I understand You, Mr. Jesus, and he, Mr. Einstein, share common ancestry, the Israelites.

J: Yeah man. Leave Einstein alone. And study some history.

A: I understand that Mr. Einstein was very much like You. Both You and Mr. Einstein were dubbed as Prince of Peace. After all, people wanted Mr. Einstein to be true. I think that’s what exactly happened back then in his time. People manipulated their experimental data to ‘prove’ that Einsteinian Special and General Relativity theories are correct. Because, to them, Mr.

---

[115] The author forgot and couldn’t find the title of the movie, though he tried internet keyword searches.

[116] See https://www.learnreligions.com/david-and-goliath-700211 .

[117] See https://en.wikipedia.org/wiki/Cinderella .

Einstein is an icon, a prophet, an idol, a hero, a symbol and maker of international peace. They 'believed in' Mr. Einstein.

J: Are you saying Einstein was more popular than Me?

A: Of course not, Sir. But back in the days of World War II[118], there was Holocaust, nations fighting, antisemitism. Then there came Mr. Einstein. His theories were so intriguing, he got international attention and sensation. Scientists all around the world were coming together in peace to learn and prove Mr. Einstein's Relativity theories. He was a symbol of peace during WWII. When nations were fighting, scientists all around the world were working together on Mr. Einstein's theories. So. Politically, Mr. Einstein's theories can't be wrong. They have to be correct. For World's peace's sake. I think that's why people manipulated experimental and observatory data to make Special and General Relativity theories would be 'confirmed' and 'proven' to be correct. It was all a political gig.

J: So you are a conspiracy theorist.

A: Ha ha ha ha ha. Well, thank you for giving me a nickname, Sir //:-)

J: Me likes Einie.[119] He inspired novelists, sci-fi writers, and filmmakers. And now, here you are, a killjoy. A party spoiler.

A: No Sir, I think the party just got started.

J: You better stop writing all this. I am the Mr. Jesus. You better listen to me. Or else, I will send you to the devil.

A: Mr. Jesus, I am Your number one fan. And I thought I was Your number one guy.[120]

J: No. You are a joker. And you're a smoker too. Are you also a midnight talker?[121]

A: lol

J: Dude, you better read the Bible, ok?

A: Yes Sir. I've read it thrice, back to back, cover to cover, Sir.

J: What did I say about time dilation, two millennia before Einstein, hmm?

A: I think you said, "In heaven, one day is like one thousand years and one thousand years is like one day."[122]

---

[118] See https://www.ducksters.com/biography/scientists/albert_einstein/germany-world-war-ii.php .

[119] See https://en.wikipedia.org/wiki/Back_to_the_Future , where a scientist, whose hair resembles Mr. Einstein's, named his dog, whose hairdo also resembles Mr. Einstein's, Einie.

[120] See https://en.wikipedia.org/wiki/Batman_(1989_film) , where a gang boss said to the future Joker, "You are my number one guy."

[121] See https://www.azlyrics.com/lyrics/stevemillerband/thejoker.html .

[122] See https://divinecoders.wordpress.com/2011/07/24/a-thousand-years-as-one-day/ , and https://biblehub.com/2_peter/3-8.htm .

J: Actually it was my disciple Peter who said that.

A: Whoopsie, sorry Sir.

J: So yeah. Time dilation is real. You can count on it. You have to believe in it.

A: With all due respect, Sir, I can't.

J: O ye of little faith.[123]

A: But Mr. Jesus. Science shouldn't be like religion.

J: What's the difference?

A: I understand religion is not only a human nature, but also a human condition. One way or another, people end up having a religion or two. If they're not religious, they subscribe to some secular religions like pro-LGBT-ism, BLM-ism, anti-climate-change-ism, marijuana-ism, tattoo-piercing-ism, sugar-fat-ism, etc.

J: Those are ideologies, politics, not religions.

A: What's the difference, Sir?

J: Anyhow. Let me teach you something, oh you of little faith.

A: I'm all ears, I'm all Yours //:-)

J: When you are living a life in the fast lane,[124] time goes so fast. If you're enjoying something, and being busy with that thing that you do, time flies. It's as if, 8 hours feels like 8 seconds. Voila, time dilation right there, son.

A: Oh. Wow.

J: So yeah. Please, stop trying disproving my high mighty Einie already. Stop wasting your time. You won't get it. You're barking at the wrong tree, son.

A: lol

J: No, stop laughing. And stop that oriental, Asiatic giggling and oh, that creepy smiling as well, as hell.

A: Oh. Okie dokie, Mr. Jesus.

J: Seriously, man. You don't know what you're doing. You're killing jobs. You're a destructionist.

A: I thought I was an iconoclast.

J: You thought? What on earth do you know.

---

[123] See https://www.biblehub.com/matthew/8-26.htm .

[124] See https://www.azlyrics.com/lyrics/eagles/lifeinthefastlane-1976.html .

A: I thought I knew enough.[125]

J: No no no no no. You ain't know a thang, man. What'd happen to tens of thousands of physicists who dedicated their youths and lives studying the Einsteinian special and general relativities? Do you know how many libraries, buildings, museums, even hospitals were named after Einstein? What, you're gonna rename them? Think about it.

A: I don't think renaming is necessary. After all, Mr. Einstein did contribute to science, bigly. Photo electric effect that he got Nobel Prize for, statistical study of Brownian motion, popularization of tensor calculus and thought experiment, etc. And he did contribute greatly to Zionism, the post-WWII establishment of the nation of Israel. They offered him to be the first president of the new Israel but he declined. Mr. Einstein indeed was a very saintly figure. I like him.

J: Then why this?

A: It is because I am a scientist. No advocacy or sympathy has any room in science. Science is a place of pure objectivity, reason, logic, and rationality.

J: I sent Einstein onto the planet Earth.

A: I thought you sent me.

J: No. I didn't. The devil did. You are a satanic destructionist.

A: Oh no. To answer your question asked prior, I don't think relativist physicists would lose jobs over this paper. I will submit this paper to journals but most likely they won't publish it. I'll put it online somewhere in the internet so people can read it, but most likely, it won't be read.

J: Good!

A: But even if this paper takes off and become a mainstream thing one day, I don't think relativist physicists would lose jobs. They became professors, they published articles, wrote books about Einsteinian relativities. They had their fun, they made their money, they got their share of money, power, fame, off of Einsteinian relativities. They had their time. What's wrong with me having some fun, if not fame?

J: Cuz you are wrong.

A: … Sir, I'm not quite sure who you are. You don't quite….talk like…a…Mr. Jesus…

J: Who said I'm Jesus?

A: You are not?

M: No. I'm an Alaskan residential moose.

---

[125] See https://en.wikipedia.org/wiki/The_Matrix , where Morpheus said the oracle lady would say she knows enough.

A: Oh.

M: I stopped by the hood and there's this Asian guy typing in his house and I snooped and eavesdropped.

A: Oh…it was you. The neighborhood moose.

M: Why did you think I'm Jesus?

A: Oh. I guess I was drunk.

M: Then stop drinking! No more drinking and writing.

A: Hey, at least I'm not drinking and driving. I'm at home. I ain't going nowhere.

M: You're an alcoholic.

A: I'd rather call myself a bacchusist. Or a dionysusian.[126] Like you said, I'm Asian. And in Asian tradition, drinking is a virtue, not a vice.

M: Then go back to your country!

A: I love it here. Alaska, America. We got freedom of speech up here.

M: You are a metaphysical vandalist. You talk sh** about special relativity and stuff. I couldn't take it anymore. So yeah. I fu#$**g intervened.

A: More name-calling. Mr. Moose, you got a sailor's mouth.

M: No. I dunno no English. You're imagining things.

A: Like I said, I'm drunk. It's a Saturday morning at home alone, so. No harm done.

M: One question, before I, the Alaskan residential hood moose, let you go.

A: Shoot.

M: Why in the universe are you writing this, so called a scientific paper, in a screenplay format,[127] Mister?

A: Oh, that. Cuz I have a performer background. Back in the days in LA, CA, I used to be a writer/actor/director/composer/producer/carterer/cinematographer/..

M: Stop stop stop talking!

A: Well, I was just answering your question.

M: You well know, you got no chance of this paper of yours getting published in a prestigious, privilegious academic journal article. Do ya?

---

[126] See https://en.wikipedia.org/wiki/Dionysus .

[127] See https://en.wikipedia.org/wiki/Jose_Chung%27s_From_Outer_Space , where a character, one Mr. Crikenson, sent a narration of an unearthly encounter with men in black in screenplay format to a publisher.

A: Oh I know.

M: Then why write it?

A: Well, for fun. I like writing. I enjoy this. All this. It's a good hobby. Nothing illegal or immoral.

M: Why not go fishing?

A: I do sometimes. But I can't stand all those mosquitoes. When it comes to fishing, unless you're a commercial fisherman, you don't really care whether you catch a fish or not. You're out there, interacting with nature, you're relaxed. That's how I do with writing. I'm relaxed. It's a hobby. Whether journals accept and publish my articles or not, that's not the point. That's irrelevant. I write for fun. And it keeps me busy. Idle hands are devil's playground, you see. So yeah. This goody goody hobby of mine keeps me out of trouble. Capiche?

M: What is Capishee. A kind of fish? I'd like one as a breakfast //:-)

A: Mr. Moose, I thought you're a vegetarian.

M: Whoops. But why all the blasphimies and shimmies and sacrileges?

A: I'd rather characterize it as a divine comedy.[128] We're doing letters and science here. Also, if I consider God as my Heavenly Father and Jesus my friend and teacher, what's wrong with joking with them and about them? We're doing a ministry here too. If I don't speak the language of secular vernacular, how can I reach out to them?

//xD

2. Relativity in Philosophy

The author recall that in an interview, a former Secretary of State Ms. Rice[129] criticized moral relativism.[130] All the author has to say on this issue for now is that he believes in moral absolutivity.

---

[128] See https://en.wikipedia.org/wiki/Divine_Comedy .
[129] See https://en.wikipedia.org/wiki/Condoleezza_Rice .
[130] See https://en.wikipedia.org/wiki/Moral_relativism .

V. Inertial Symmetry

1. Dimension Analysis

We will make a narrative that resembles scenes in the Book of Genesis in Bible.[131] But,

we will not assume the existence of God, an absolutely static observer, the everlasting and the unchanging deity. Mr. Einstein did assume such observer and that's why he assumed that there is such a thing as an absolutely static observer and an absolutely moving object. Also, Mr. Einstein assumed the absolutivity of speed of light. If you think about it, Einsteinian Special Relativity is more about abolutivity, not relativity. It's about light being the supreme deity, before whom the time and the space kneel down and bend over backwards. Einsteinian Special Relativity has an absolutivistic Judaistic overtone, thought Mr. Einstein did not practice any religion expressly.[132]

In Book of Genesis, the very first thing that God created was light. Judeo-Christianity is very fond of light and so were ancient Egyptians and so was later on, yes, Mr. Einstein. In contrast, Chinese philosophy of Taoism considers water as a virtuous entity.[133]

Now, let us do our own things. Let's say, in the beginning of the universe, there was nothing but empty space. What's the dimensionality of an empty space? One may say 4 dimension, 3 for the x-y-z axes and then 1 for the time dimension. Well, the thing is, if there is nothing in space, if it is just an empty space, there is no point of having three x-y-z axes and there's no purpose of having time dimension either. So, we'd rather say that an empty universe has no dimension, or is dimension-less.

Next, let's say, there is Adam, all alone in the universe. Again, in this scientific thought experiment, we do not assume the existence of an absolutely static observer like God, which was where Mr. Einstein erred because he assumed such divine existence. We're doing science here. Though we do talk about religion a lot more than any other science papers, we don't exactly mix science and religion like Mr. Einstein implicitly did.

Ok. Say, there is Adam in the universe. Nothing else exists. Then, what's the dimensionality of Adam's existence in the universe?

---

[131] See https://en.wikipedia.org/wiki/Book_of_Genesis .

[132] See https://en.wikipedia.org/wiki/Albert_Einstein .

[133] See https://fractalenlightenment.com/40135/meditation/7-taoist-meditation-techniques-taoist-watercourse-tradition and https://sites.google.com/site/ontaoism/8 .

a. 0th Dimension

Let's follow along the line of Judeo-Christian way of thinking and assume that the only

thing that exists in the universe is a photon. Mathematically, let's say the photon is a dot in space with no size. Just a single dot in an empty space, the universe. Now, the question is, is this photon moving? Let's not hurry in answering this question. Let's think it through. The concept we're exploring here is both a physical and a philosophical one.

…

…

…

One thing to consider is this. The photon is alone in the universe. So it is impossible to say the photon is moving at 3×10^8 m/s, or at any speed, or at 0 m/s. It merely exists. The point is, a photon doesn't have to move. And if there is nothing else in the universe, it makes no difference whether the photon is standing still, or moving at 1 m/s or at *c*. It is because the concept of speed is inherently relativistic, in the fashion of Galilean or Newtonian mechanics. Of course, in this thought experiment, we're not talking about acceleration or deceleration. We're strictly limiting the scope of discussion to the concept of inertia where objects have constant speed, at zero or non-zero m/s.

Does the notion that a photon can stand still sound too much like a scientific heresy? Well, then please consider the following section //:-)

b. 1st Dimension

Let's say, there are two photons and nothing else in the universe. Photon 1 and photon 2.

A good thing about photons is that they have no mass, so they don't collide each other. If you cross two flashlight beams, they pass each other right through, as photon is an electromagnetic wave, actually.[134]

Now, say the two photons are traveling next to each other in the same direction, 1 meter apart. And there is nothing else in the universe. Then, can photon 1 say that photon 2 is moving? The author wouldn't think so. To the two photons, they probably think that they're both standing still. But there is 1-dimensionality in their existence, as there is a straight line connecting the two, the distance of 1 meter.

---

[134] See https://en.wikipedia.org/wiki/Photon .

Say, photon 1 is moving toward photon 2. Well, let's say there are two people and nobody else in the universe: Adam and Eve. Somehow, they're approaching each other along a straight line. Is Adam moving toward Eve, or is it Eve moving toward Adam? Inertial Symmetry proposition states that there is no difference between the two, because they're equivalent, or symmetric. We posit that such inertial symmetry proposition should be crowned as an axiom,[135] a foundational, fundamental truth that we can safely assume to be true without proving it to be true, because the proposition is self-evident.

In contrast, Einsteinian Special Relativity proposition is the absolute constant-ness of speed of light that states that the relative speed of light is *c*, no matter how fast or slow or static an observer's speed is. We argue that there is no rhyme or reason that such proposition should be garnered with the honor of being an axiom.

Anyhow, let's get back to Adam and Eve's story. Again, we assume that there is nothing else, and there is no absolutely static observer like a Judeo-Christian Deity in this scientific thought experiment.

So Adam is a man and he has his pride. Let's hear him:

A: Oh, hello, my beautiful one. I can see that you're moving toward me, finally. I'm glad.

E: Me? No. You're moving toward me. And it's creepy already. Please stop.

A: Oh. Okay.

The point is, we're all ego-centric. Egocentrism is natural. It's neither good nor bad. It just, is. It's how we are, how it is. Inertial symmetry doctrine states that Adam moving toward Eve, or Eve moving toward Adam, there is no difference. They're equivalent, they're symmetric. The only thing Adam observes is that the distance between him and her is shortening at the speed of 3 m/s.

Can Adam measure such relative speed? Yes. This paper is about disproof of Einsteinian Special Relativity theory. So we can't assume what we try to prove in the process of proving it. We can't assume that length contraction does not exist.

Let's say, Eve is measuring Adam's speed with a ruler and stopwatch. Eve extends a ruler toward Adam and starts her stop watch. Adam is moving toward Eve when she's standing still, according to Eve's egocentristic point of view. For the sake of argument, let's assume that Mr. Einstein was right and Adam is going through a length contraction. Even so, the length contraction may happen toward Adam's center of mass, or his front end of the body, or his back end of the body. No matter how length contraction happens, Adam still has the center of mass and it's moving. When that Adam's center of mass passes 20 meter mark on Eve's ruler, she measures the time. When his center of mass passes 10 meter mark on Eve's ruler, she measures the time again. And she calculates the speed of Adam moving toward her. Then Eve tells Adam to stop moving and he does. Now Adam starts moving away from Eve. Then Eve tells Adam to stop moving away and asks him to stand still. Let's hear her:

---

[135] See https://en.wikipedia.org/wiki/Axiom .

E: Adam, please don't be too far away or too close. Just be there. Gimme some space. And be there for me when I need ya. Can you do that?

A: Oh. Okay. Of course.

Well, enough breaktime we had //xD Let's bring back our two photons. The point of this exercise is this. When there are two objects moving along one straight line, the only thing they can tell is whether they're both standing still, or the distance between the two is shortening at a certain constant speed, or the distance between the two is widening at a speed. There is no one else in the universe, so there is no way to tell who is moving.

Direction? Yes, there is directionality in one dimension. Say, photon 2 is thinking that photon 1 is moving towards photon 2, and then overlap, i.e., photon 1 is passing though photon 2 and then photon 1 is now moving away from photon 2.

Photon 1 ⟶ Photon 2

Photon 2 may designate the direction that photon 1 was coming from as "left" or "west." Then photon 2 randomly refers to the direction that photon 1 is now moving away towards as "right" or "east." In French, left and right are called *gauche et droite*. In Spanish, *izquierda y derecha*. Out there in the universe where there are only two photons, there is no such a thing as up and down or right and left or front and back. All directions are equivalent, symmetric. At least, that is what we call Inertial Symmetry proposition. It is very much Galilean and Newtonian.

But, Inertial Symmetry proposition is not compatible with Einsteinian proposition, as we have seen in prior sections. Which proposition is correct? We think Inertial Symmetry proposition is. But we respect the people's liberty, freedom, and rights. It is up to the readers which scientists they want to "believe in". Is science that much different from religion? Not really. //xD

Now, let's get back and do some science. Physics and math, mostly. Can we construct 2-dimensionality with two photons? Yes. Let's go ahead to the next section then //:-)

c. 2nd Dimension

Say, photon1 is standing still and photon 2 is moving and photon 1 is not in the way of photon 2's straight trajectory:

Photon 2
Photon 1

This situation is analogous to *Girl from Ipanema*'s situation.[136] It's like, Adam is standing by and Eve is passing him by, either because Adam failed to impress her or because Eve was impressed but she didn't want to look obvious. No matter what the case is, the configuration above creates 2-dimensional space because photon 1 is outside of 1-dimensional space created by photon 2, that is traveling 1 m/s. If our dear readers find this objectionable, please feel free to imagine the two objects are ball 1 and ball 2 //:-) But out of curiosity, how can a photon travel at 1m/s? Well, imagine car that travels to the left at speed of c – 1m/s. Then the passenger shoots a laser beam photon toward the right. To a static photon 1, photon 2 travels at 1 m/s to the right, according to Mr. Galileo.

Next setting is two photons moving in opposite directions:

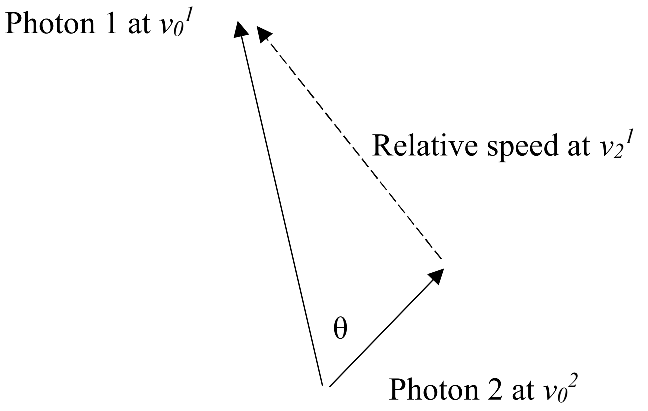
Photon 1
Photon 2

Here, let's say both photon 1 and photon 2 are going at c. Then the speed of photon 1 relative to photon 2 is $2c$ and vice versa, if the reader subscribes to Galileanism, like this author does. As one can see and feel, the restoration of good ole Galileanism can be a liberating experience. Once unsubscribed from Einsteinism, sky is the limit. Why? Because there is no such a thing as the maximum speed limit in our thought experiments anymore //:-)

---

[136] See https://en.wikipedia.org/wiki/The_Girl_from_Ipanema .

Now, let us make an angle. Assume that photon 1 is traveling at 2*c* and photon 2 is traveling at 0.5*c* and the direction of their travels have an angle, θ.[137]



Then, the velocity of photon 1 relative to photon 2 is:[138]

$$\mathbf{v_2^1 = v_0^2 - v_0^1}$$

What's notable in this setting is as follows. Although photon 1 and photon 2 are moving in a 2-dimensional straight plane, when the see each other, it is as if they're moving on a straight line. Actually, photon 2 does not think he himself is moving at all. All photon 2 can observe is that photon 1 is moving away from him at a constant speed. Likewise, in this universe where there is nothing but two photons, the only thing that photon 1 observes is that photon 2 is moving away from him.

---

[137] Please forgive the author of the crudity of the diagrams //xD

[138] Well, we kinda cheated a little bit here, as we are assuming the existence of the third observer, photon 0. But that is not exactly a cheating, because we are still measuring the speeds of photon 1 and photon 2, relative to photon 0. It is not required that photon 0 is moving or standing still. It's because in Galilean system, there is no difference between standing still and moving with constant velocity.

d. 3rd Dimension and beyond

Those of us who were blessed with good teachers, good books, and good studying habits

are familiar with the interconnection between this mathematical concept of dimensionality[139] and that philosophical concept of extension.[140]

Basically, it goes like this. A dot has zero dimension. If you stack dots on top of each other, you have a straight line, 1 dimension. If you stack lines over other lines, you have a straight plane, 2 dimension. Then you stack up burger patty, a slice of onion, and flat buns, in order to make a 3-dimensional hamburger for your lunch.

The fourth dimension is like a motion picture. Let's think about a film roll. It's a three dimensional still picture,[141] stacked upon one another to give us the four dimensional space. The fourth axis is the time axis. Mr. Einstein popularized the idea, so we do give him due credit for that contribution.

How about the fifth dimension? Anyone, any thoughts?

…

…

…

In an Twilight Zone[142] TV series' introduction, Mr. Sterling states that the fifth dimension corresponds to a man's imagination. And the author agrees.

The fourth dimension can be thought as the history of the universe. The three dimensional physical universe where its constituents changing positions along the time axis. That's the fourth dimension, the history of the universe.

The next dimension is just stacking up one history of the universe with other alternative histories of the universe. And one man can do so. Say, he's a sci-fi writer and he wrote many sci-fi's, each of which features one alternative history of the universe. Let's say the one sci-fi writer wrote about 20 volumes of sci-fi novels.

---

[139] See https://en.wikipedia.org/wiki/Dimension .

[140] See https://philosophy.stackexchange.com/questions/19975/what-is-extension-in-spinoza and https://www.lovewisdom.net/philosophical%20topics/Spinoza%20&%20Descartes%20on%20mind%20and%20body.html .

[141] A photographic frame of a film roll is two-dimensional square but it does give us three-dimensional image in our minds as we can perceive the depth in the photograph. Or you can think of a still 3-dimensional holographic photo.

[142] See https://en.wikipedia.org/wiki/The_Twilight_Zone .

The sixth dimension? Well, all we gotta do is to line up a sci-fi writer's volume series, next to another, next to another writer's volume series'.

The seventh dimension? So the sixth's dimension is nothing but the collection of all men's imaginations. There can be only one of such collection of imaginations of all men and women that ever existed, that is existing, that will ever exist. Then what can the seventh dimension possibly be?

…

…

…

One way to think about it is this: God's imaginations. What if God imagines different possibilities of human history, humans, and their imaginations? We stack God's imagined collection of people on top of each other, then you got your 7th dimension. //:-D

2. Two Requiescent Analogies[143]

Let us do the letters, as we've done sciences mostly for a while. We'll alternate between

letters and sciences so as to give the respective brain department the very much needed brain breaks //xD

In this entertainment opportunity, we'll make some nice analogies between science, and democratic election, courtroom trial, ideological activism, etc. We'll have some theater fun //:-)

---

[143] The author started writing this article on 9/12/2020. As of writing this portion, today is 9/21/2020. This author looked up in the internet to see if he has any predecessors, who also took a shot at disproving Mr. Einstein's Relativity theories. He was pleasantly surprised to find some today. One of them is a gentleman who is by far more professional a scientist and more serious about science, who published an article on the subject back in 2016. See https://www.researchgate.net/publication/297527784_Challenge_to_the_Special_Theory_of_Relativity . The author briefly browsed over the gentleman's article and was thoroughly impressed, though the author obtained all the ideas in this article independently from the paper mentioned. This author has been working on disproof of Einsteinian Special and General Relativity theories for two decades, off and on of course, as one of his backburner projects //:-)

a. Trial Analogy

In the court of natural science,[144] Mr. Einstein has been sued by Mr. Galileo and this

Author ("P" hereafter, Plaintiff's attorney representing Galileanism) is playing Mr. Galileo's civil-plaintiff-side attorney. An army of professional physicists ("D" hereafter, Defendant's attorneys representing Einsteinism) has formed the big defense team of "the" Mr. Albert Einstein, representing the scientific- industrial-academic mega complex, a.k.a., "the" establishment. Who is the judge? The People ("J" hereafter, a judge representing the People). Let the trial begin.

J: (the judge hammers his gavel three times) Alright. A civil case 123-ABCDE. Who represents the plaintiff? Step forward.

P: Good morning, Your Honor.

J: Morning to you. What's your credential and relevance in this matter?

D: Yes Sir, I'm an amateur scientist, a secular scholar, a private academic.

J: Oh .. kay. What do you do for living?

D: I'm a lawyer, Sir.

J: Well, I understand many high-quality mathematicians were lawyers, like Fermat,[145] Goldbach,[146] etc. But you have to understand. This is not a Court of Law. This is a Court of Science. I think you came to a wrong court room.

P: I know some science to defend my client, Sir.

J: Who is your client?

P: Mr. Galileo Galilei, Sir. Actually, he's not with us today, so I represent Galileanism, a Galilean ideology in physics, perhaps in metaphysics as well, but not in ethics.

J: Oh…kay. How about the defendant side?

D: Yes, Your Honor. We are all defense team and we all are here today to defend our client, Mr. Albert Einstein. But likewise, he's not with us here today, so we represent Einsteinism, an Einsteinian ideology in physics, perhaps in everything in the universe.

J: Alright. So. Plaintiff, what art thy complaint?

P: Oh, no complaint, Your Honor.

J: Then why are you here?

---

[144] See https://www.youtube.com/watch?v=ltg6mfeG11s , wherefrom a similar line was adopted here.

[145] See https://en.wikipedia.org/wiki/Pierre_de_Fermat .

[146] See https://en.wikipedia.org/wiki/Christian_Goldbach .

P: Well, I'm a politician wanna-be and I lost in a local election in Alaska about a month ago.[147]

D: Objection, Your Honor. Politics is irrelevant in Science.

P: Defendant, I understand. But I'm kinda curious what outrageous story Plaintiff's attorney has to say. So I'm gonna allow it.

P: Thank you for the Court's indulgence, Sir. So I still wanna get elected for a public office one day. And I'm writing this physics paper and hopefully the paper gets known one day and I become famous, and then people would vote for me.

D: … Your Honor, we recommend Plaintiff's attorney get sanctions for being so astonishingly frivolous and disrespectful to the Court of High Science. He is wasting the Science Court's resources for his own political gain. He is self-serving, Sir. So self-serving. He is serving himself!

J: Okay okay. Plaintiff's attorney, enough about your political ambition. Now, why don't you make some scientific argument for your client, if you would. And if you could.

P: Oh, thank you, Your Honor. Hereby, I incorporate by reference, all the arguments made in a paper titled, *Inertial Symmetry Axiom Theory.*

J: … What is that? I never got a copy.

D: It's unheard of, Sir. We never got copies either.

P: Oh, it's because the paper isn't finished yet. As of speaking, I've written about 31 pages so far, 12-font, Times New Roman, single-spaced. It took me about 10 days so far.

J: Alright. The trial is continued until the paper gets written out and submitted to some physics journal or uploaded to some public websites so the People and the Einsteinianists can have a chance to read it. Adjourned. (the judge hammers his gavel three times)

Scene.[148] //xD

---

[147] See https://www.elections.alaska.gov/results/20PRIM/data/sovc/ElectionSummaryReportRPT20.pdf and https://ballotpedia.org/Alaska_State_Senate_District_D and https://en.wikipedia.org/wiki/2020_Alaska_Senate_election . To see a detailed account of this author's campaign activities, please see https://papers.ssrn.com/sol3/papers.cfm?abstract_id=3701959 .

[148] See https://boards.straightdope.com/t/is-it-end-scene-or-and-scene/642851 . The author used to do some acting in Los Angeles, CA, in 2006-2008. An actor goes to an audition, does his monologue routine, and at the end of it, he says, "Scene" in order to signal the end of the monologue performance in front of directors, writers, etc.

b. Election Analogy

Alright, folks. Let's jump right to it.

M: Oh, you Aging Alaskan American Asian man. You will make a spectacular failure in this venture.

A: Oh. it's you again. The good ole Alaskan residential neighborhood moose. The Hood Moose with sailor's mouth on planet earth. The former impostor of Mr. Jesus. Thank you for stopping by. What can I do for you today?

M: See, you're running against an incumbent. Mr. Albert Einstein is the incumbent and you are his challenger. You got no chance, man. Give it up.

A: Hey, I'm a runner. I love running. I run during every one-hour lunch break of mine, Mon thru Fri. Whether win or lose an election, that's irrelevant. I enjoy the process //:-)

M: What I'm saying is, you will lose. You can count on it. Your paper that you're writing now? It will never get published in a journal. Even if you upload it in the internet somewhere, it will not be read. Dead on arrival, dude. Your paper will be a metaphysical stillborn baby. Your brain child, i.e., your physics paper, will be buried six feet under other more professional physics papers written by professional physicists, the real scientists, all around the world. I'm sorry. But, I'm saying all this so you won't be sorry. So you won't get disappointed when you get rejected by real scientists.

A: Mr. Moose, how would you like me come hackling ya when you munch on tree brigs in my backyard like you do every now and then?

M: That's what you do with me, every single time! You bother me. Your yard? Your premises? Your property? Hey man, you people took it away from me. This entire State of Alaska used to be my house!

A: Well. But you're always a welcome guest in my yard. But please don't drop your droppings in my yard no more. Why do I have to clean after you?

M: I don't give a s***

A: But you do give it to my yard.

M: Man, you ain't no fun. Go crawl back to your closet and write it all up, man. Best wishes.

A: Thank you, Mr.

M: One more thing before I go. Albert Einstein wrote papers from pure love of science and he became so famous that the new state of Israel offered him the president job and he declined in order to focus on science.

A: Sure.

M: Now here you are, not liking the science, not knowing the science, and you're writing a physics paper so reluctantly. You said it yourself. You're writing this paper and that paper only because you lost a primary election recently and your campaign stopped, and you got nothing else to do in your spare time other than writing.

A: I guess.

M: What is worse, you're writing this so-called physics paper in order to enhance your chance of winning the next election. What a contrast between Albert Einstein and the Big Nothing you.[149]

A: Ok. Are we done?

M: Yeah.

A: My advice, be nice.

M: I'm out.

Scene. What an obscene scene. //xD

VI. Disproofs of Einsteinian Special Relativity

In the martial art of Jujitsu, a person only needs to bend the wrong way of the opponent's

one joint, be it neck, wrist, ankle, or elbow. If one joint is grabbed and twisted, the entire body of the opponent is disabled, neutralized, and the opponent taps out. Such is the submission-style martial art, popular nowadays in mixed martial arts community all around the world. In this chapter, and in other parts of this paper, we do the same thing.

As opposed to diving into the nitty-gritty mathematical castle of Einsteinian Special Relativity theory, we attack key assumptions of the theory. Einsteinian Special Relativity theory has a few foundational, fundamental propositions that Mr. Einstein regarded as axioms, i.e., propositions that can be assumed to be true without proving them to be true. We will attach those key assumptions so that the kingdom of Einsteinian Special Relativity theory would collapse like a deck of cards.[150]

---

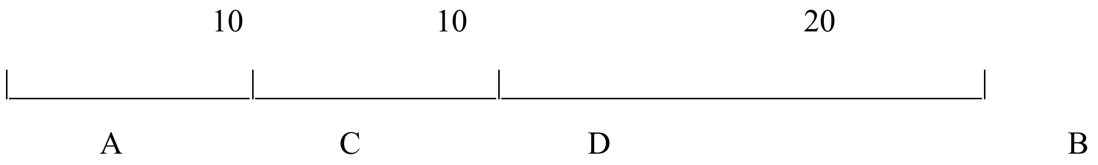
[149] See https://en.wikipedia.org/wiki/The_Mask_(1994_film) , where the one Mr. Ipkiss' landlady nicknames him as the 'big nothing.'

[150] But, this campaign against Einsteinian Special Relativity theory is out of love, not hate. We want to correct the errors that Mr. Einstein made. It is a creative destruction, not a metaphysical vandalism. See https://en.wikipedia.org/wiki/Creative_destruction .

But, this is a metaphysical campaign, a bloodless revolution. Not a single soul or body of human being will be injured or harmed in any way. This is a continuing intellectual entertainment. So please, sit back and enjoy the show //:-D

1. Disproof of Relativity of Simultaneity

Mr. Einstein thought that light is such absolute an entity. Let us set up a thought experiment as follows.



What we have here is four guys experimenting with light signals. At the beginning, Adam and Brown used to be where Daniel is at, the middle point of the line. There, Adam and Brown synchronize their clocks. With the same speed, Adam walks to the left, Brown walks to the right. This way, even if there were such a thing as time dilation, Adam's and Brown's clocks are still in synch, because they walked with the same speed and same distance of 10 miles, to reach the respective end points shown in diagram above.

Now, when Adam's and Brown's clocks hit 12:00 PM sharp, they flash their flashlights toward Daniel. Adam's photon and Brown's photon will arrive at Daniel's photo sensor at the same time after a while, as the speed of photon is not infinite, but finite.

Next, Daniel walks out of that middle point. When Adam's and Brown's clocks hit 01:00 PM sharp, they flash their flashlights toward Charlie. Adam's photon and Brown's photon will arrive at Charlie's photo sensor at the different times after a while, as the speed of photon is not infinite, but finite. Since Adam is closer in distance to Charlie than Charlie-Brown distance,[151] Adam's photon will arrive at Charlie first. Then Brown's photon will arrive at Charlie's photo sensor later.

Mr. Einstein thus concluded that the concept of simultaneity is not absolute, but relative. His assumption is that the speed of light should be the golden standard, a touchstone, when it comes to measuring simultaneity.

---

[151] See https://en.wikipedia.org/wiki/Charlie_Brown for a good ole memory //:-)

It is true that Charlie perceives as if Adam flashed first, and Brown flashed second. On that account, Mr. Einstein was correct. But where he erred is that Mr. Einstein concluded from that, that the perception or the very concept of simultaneity is relative, not absolute. And we argue today that such logical jump from point A to point B in his logical cerebration is an illogical non-sequitur.[152]

Mr. Einstein assumed that the speed of light is the absolute upper limit of speed in the universe. An obvious question is, why? What is the reason to assume so? This one Asiatic Alaskan American does not find any rhyme or reason to stay with Einsteinian Special Relativity theory.[153]

The speed of light is fast indeed. But, can we think of any signaling methodology that can be faster that the photon signaling? Let us think it over, think it through.

…

…

…

…

…

…

…

It turns out that there is.

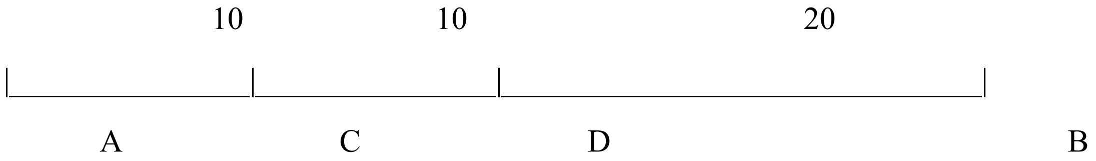
2. Disproof of Speed of Light as the Universal Maximum Speed

---

[152] See https://en.wikipedia.org/wiki/Formal_fallacy .

[153] See https://www.azlyrics.com/lyrics/tracychapman/givemeonereason.html for a breaktime karaoke session //:-)

Let’s say, in the diagram aforementioned previously, well, let’s copy and paste here again for convenience’s sake:



So. What’s going on here? Between Adam and Charlie, there is a wooden rod of length of 10 miles. Between Brown and Charlie, there is a wooden rod of length of 30 miles. At 01:00 PM sharp, Adam pushes the 10-mile rod toward Charlie and Brown pushes the 30-mile rod toward Charlie, to mark the 1pm alarm bell. The story goes, as Charlie was taking a nap during his lunch break and he let his two friends to alarm him when the lunch break is over so he can get back to work on time.

Charlie is a wise guy and he knows Adam may fall asleep too, so as a backup plan, he also had Brown alert him. Of course, it would take more energy and muscle or higher powered heavy duty truck to push 30-mile wooden rod for Brown to push. But it can be done, as long as the wooden rod is a very thing one. Too much energy consumption? Not environment-soundly enough? Then here.

Let’s assume that it’s not wooden rods, but 10-mile and 30-mile long threads, two sets of strings, from Adam to Charlie, from Charlie to Brown. All Adam and Brown need to do to wake up the nappy sleepy Charlie is pull the strings attached to Charlie’s left and right wrists. When they do so, will Charlie’s left hand be pulled earlier than his right hand?

…

…

…

…

…

Bingo. That's it. Ladies and gentlemen, we just found a signaling method that is truly simultaneous, and yes, this signal is faster that speed of light. To make sure, let's do the numbers, like so. No, well. We need to simplify things. Let us open up another section for this.

3. The Final Illustration

So let us draw another ASCII art[154] diagram:

```
|____________________________________________________|

A                                                    E
```

So here he goes again, our good ole homeboy homie Mr. Adam. And his single female acquaintance, Ms. Eve, who wants Adam to be not to far away but still not too close, as she wants some space and she also want him to be there for her when she needs him for whatever reasons, like vacuuming her flat's floor or taking out trash or what not.

Adam and Eve live in the same town, but the opposite sides of that town. The town is a big town with a diameter, 100 miles. Is there such a city in America or anywhere else in the world? No idea. But we're doing a thought experiment thingy, so that's fine.

Adam and Eve can be a galaxy away. But the distance is finite, because they're not moving. Well, relative to each other, the distance between them is not shortening or elongating.

So Adam has this wooden straight rod that stretches from his place to Eve's place of residence. It can be a telephone copper cable or internet fiber optic cable. Or it can be a very thin wooden rod with the thickness of good old fashioned toothpick. Let's say it's thin enough for Adam to push with his arms or with his truck or whatever, to signal 07:00 PM to Eve, so that she can do her hair and dress nice, so that they can meet up in a nice restaurant downtown to have a Friday dinner date. Is the signaling rod too heavy? No problem.

---

[154] See https://en.wikipedia.org/wiki/ASCII_art .

From Eve to Adam, there is this long, 100-mile long thread, a string. All Eve needs to do is to pull the string to signal Adam that it's time, 7pm.

The question is, what is the speed of this rod-pushing, or string-pulling signal methods?

…

…

…

…

…

Now we are ready to do some numbers. Let go get it, kind ladies and gentlemen:

$$\text{Speed} = \text{Distance} / \text{Time} = 100 \text{ miles} / 0 = \infty = \text{Infinity}$$

What just happened? Well, we just found a signaling method that is faster than speed of light. A true and absolute simultaneity. Thank you, everyone //:-D

Epilogue[155]

Hello everyone, thank you for your kind and generous readership //:-D We hope you enjoyed the show. Our next article to write and publish will be titled, "Force Echelon Axiom Theory." There, we'll introduce a disproof of Einsteinian General Relativity theory.[156]

Thank you for your time and see you later, kind and generous ladies and gentlemen //:-)

---

[155] This paper was started being written on 8/25/2020, a week after the author found out he lost the primary election on 8/18/2020. It was finished being written on 9/7/2020, the Labor Day Monday //:-)

[156] See https://en.wikipedia.org/wiki/The_Road_Not_Taken .

Force Echelon Axiom Theory[157]

Huhnkie Lee[158]

A theory is presented that is an alternative to, if not a disproof of, Einsteinian General Relativity theory. If not a mathematical disproof, perhaps a metaphysical displacement rather. A replacement. Any objections? //!-)

The discussion of physics is followed by a discussion of metaphysics relevant to the topic. A vertical hierarchy of forces in the universe is introduced.

Prologue

Hello everyone, thank you for your kind and generous readership //:-D This is a research paper, but I will keep it as entertaining as possible. Please enjoy-

I. Special and General Relativity Theories by Mr. Einstein

4. Einsteinian Special Relativity theory.

In our previous paper,[159] we presented an alternative to, if not a disproof of, Einsteinian Special Relativity theory. The main points were as follows. First, a scenario where A moves to the left while B stays still, should be equivalent to a scenario where B moves to the right while A stays still. But Einsteinian framework results in an asymmetry. Second, if there is a long string between A and B, and if A pulls the string in order to signal B, the speed of such signal is infinity, which is faster that the speed of signal by light.

Based on composition of such elementary concepts, like a child playing with Lego[160] blocks, we were able to demolish the Goliathan empire that Mr. Einstein built a century ago. Was Mr. Einstein a great scientist, or a great sorcerer?

---

[157] This paper is dedicated to the author's family members and friends who also played parental figures, eternal inspirers, and spiritual mentors to him in being there for him when no one else was, who corrected him when he was wrong, and who taught him life lessons and everlasting wisdoms. Started being written on 10/3/2020.

[158] A lawyer by trade, a mathematician by hobby, a U.S. Army veteran by record, a former computer programmer, a prior PhD candidate in computational biology, a former actor/writer/director/indie-filmmaker/background-music-composer. Born in the USA, 1978.

[159] See https://vixra.org/abs/2009.0211 . Although this author has reached the conclusions of this paper and the previous paper, there have been serious attempts and perhaps successes, if not widely accepted, to disprove Einsteinian Relativity theories. For instance, see https://www.goodreads.com/author/show/268911.Scott_Reeves .

[160] See https://en.wikipedia.org/wiki/Lego . See also https://www.biblica.com/bible/niv/matthew/18/ .

M: At least he was soberer.

A: Oh, Mr. Moose. Welcome back, Sir.

M: You are the great sorcerer. Well, you ain't famous yet so you ain't great. You ain't even a sorcerer as you knows not no magic trick. I know what you are. You're a corrupter of the youth. You're confusing people.

A: I thought that's what Mr. Einstein was. He confused a lot of people and he still does.

M: Mr. Einstein is an inspirer. You? A party spoiler. You are insignificant. You will quickly be forgotten.

A: Mr. Moose. You're so mean. Do you know why a pig is so well fed in the barn?

M: Isn't it because farmers have extra food they throw out, like left-over dinner?

A: That may as well be. But farm animals are well fed so that one day, they'd get slaughtered and be meat to us, Homo sapiens'.

M: I take offense to that.

A: Oh sorry, I forgot you're an edible animal too.

M: Oh please, stop it.

A: Hey, you're a residential moose, so nobody will hunt you. You're in a very safe place.

M: So why all of a sudden talking about farm animals?

A: I mean, Einsteinian relativity theories are like cash cows. How many books and movies have been made about his relativities?

M: That's what I'm talking about. Stop writing this paper. You're destroying the economy.

A: It's the creative destruction concept in economics.[161] No harm done. A phoenix in Greek mythology.[162] Burn in ashes only to be reborn again. Rejuvenation. How about the resurrection of Mr. Jesus in three days?[163]

M: Why are you writing a research paper in a screenplay format anyways?

A: Because otherwise, it'd be too boring to write, even more boring to read. I wanna be happy. I wanna make people happy. I have a performer's background, so.

M: Oh that joker, smoker, midnight talker?[164]

---

[161] See https://en.wikipedia.org/wiki/Creative_destruction .

[162] See https://en.wikipedia.org/wiki/Phoenix_%28mythology%29 .

[163] See https://en.wikipedia.org/wiki/Resurrection_of_Jesus .

[164] See https://www.azlyrics.com/lyrics/stevemillerband/thejoker.html .

A: Well that's Steve Miller Band. I'm a huge fan, though.

M: So all this, is just some corny, over-the-top, a dirt cheap, dirty deeds done dirt cheap,[165] a dog-and-pony routine? Is science a joke to you?

A: Well. All I'm saying is, there should be some balance between work and play.

M: But you're playing before you work. You're supposed to play after work.

A: Whoops. But.

M: But what?

A: In this paper, we won't confine ourselves in physics. We'll as well do some metaphysics as well.

M: Meta…what?

A: Like, who doesn't like philosophy, huh? Why not some balance between letters and science?

M: Letters? You don't even know how to pronounce English words. You got a heavy, audible Asiatic accents. And you're very much so visibly an Asiatic man. You're an Asian. Ha ha.

M: Oh come on, Mr. Moose. Please stop being such a racist. You ain't even a human being.

A: Then stop eating tasty animals!

M: Well. My breakfast is strictly vegetarian. I eat tofu, beans, veggies, etc. I eat healthy. And I love rhapsody.[166]

//xD

5. Comparison of Special and General Relativity theories by Mr. Einstein

Ok folks, let's do science. So, one way to look at Einsteinian Special Relativity theory is that it's a religion that worships light, and treats Light as an absolute deity. Mr. Einstein assumes that the speed of light is the universally absolute maximum speed, like no one is allowed to be faster than speed of light, because light is "the" god, the highest and the mightiest. By the same token, Mr.

---

[165] See https://www.azlyrics.com/lyrics/acdc/dirtydeedsdonedirtcheap.html .

[166] See https://www.merriam-webster.com/dictionary/rhapsody ; https://en.wikipedia.org/wiki/Hungarian_Rhapsodies ; https://www.youtube.com/watch?v=eFHdRkeEnpM . A whole a lot of rhapsody melodies in the world. By Liszt, By Gershwin. Good stuffs. Very free-spirited. Very truly inspirational for sure. //:-D

Einstein says light is a god of equality and no matter how fast or slow an observer is, the relative speed of light should stay the same, because Light is the god of egalitarianism.

Anyhow, Einsteinian Special Relativity theory[167] is about constant velocity, i.e., inertia or inertial state of affair, like same speed or no speed at all.[168] Then, Einsteinian General Relativity theory[169] is about acceleration.[170] Then in this religion of General Relativity, who is the new god?

…

…

…

…

…

How about gravitation? In Special Relativity, the absolute god of the universe was light. The speed of high and mighty Light god is so absolute, even the time and the space has to slow down and shrink before the presence of the Light god. In the religion of General Relativity, Mr. Einstein, the high and mighty chief priest, came up with an even superior god: the gravity. Even the former god of the universe, the Light god, has to give way to the Gravity god. Einsteinian relativity theories can be thought as a form of pantheism,[171] if not a box of pandora.[172]

As mentioned in the previous paper on disproof of Special Relativity, the religion of Christianity is very fond of light. In Old Testament, God said, "Let there be light." In New Testament, Mr. Jesus said, "You are the light of the world." Light was the very first thing that God created according to Bible. How about gravitation? What's Bible's take on gravity?

---

[167] See https://en.wikipedia.org/wiki/Special_relativity .
[168] See https://en.wikipedia.org/wiki/Inertia .
[169] See https://en.wikipedia.org/wiki/General_relativity .
[170] See https://en.wikipedia.org/wiki/Acceleration .
[171] See https://en.wikipedia.org/wiki/Panentheism .
[172] See https://en.wikipedia.org/wiki/Pandora%27s_box .

Well, in Eastern tradition, dualism is frequently adopted. Heaven and earth, day and night, men and women, king and servant, parent and child, employer and employee. Such is the "tao"[173] of yin and yang in Asian philosophy.[174]

In Western tradition, gods live in heaven, humans on earth, and there is hell, or hades, or the "under-world".[175] So, it is fair to say that gravitation has some negative connotation, at least in the Western culture. Like, the down-pulling temptation of Satan, the evil one, to "detract" someone "downwards."

So. A "black hole" bending the light, even absorbing it, that may have sounded obscene to some people. Does a black hole exist? Well, the country that this author lives in is America, which constitutionally guarantees the freedom of religion. Science, isn't that much different from religion. If there are two conflicting science theories, it is up to the People which one to choose. After all, it's a free world.

//!-)

M: Wait, wait a minute. You just characterized Einsteinism, a true science, as a religion. I call that a blaspheme. An unholy sacrilege.

A: Well. What you said belies, betrays your proposition that Einsteinism is a science. I said Einsteinism is a religion and you said I just committed a blaspheme, like, I insulted your god. What does that say about your "science"?

M: Hmm. I'd have to think about that.

A: Oh good ole you, Alaskan residential neighborhood Mr. Moose. I didn't realize you ever think.

M: Oh, why yes, I do. From time to time.

A: Okay. When you do think, what do you think about?

M: Oh. I think about what premises I would trespass and what tree branches I would munch on.

A: Ahh. That's some good Alaskan Moosian thinking!

M: lol thank you //:-)

A: I love it when an Alaskan moose smiles. Wait, hold on. Gotta take a cellphone picture of you and I'll put it in social media. A moose smiling photograph.

---

[173] See https://en.wikipedia.org/wiki/Taoism .
[174] See https://en.wikipedia.org/wiki/Yin_and_yang .
[175] See https://en.wikipedia.org/wiki/Hades .

//xD

6. Motivation of Einsteinian Proposition

Mr. Eistein started his General Relativity theory by assuming that an observer in a space rocket will not able to distinguish between inertial force of an accelerating rocket and gravitational force of equal magnitude exerted on a static rocket. That much is true. But Mr. Einstein made an illogical leap in the next step. Which one is that?

…

…

…

…

…

Well, Mr. Einstein's next step, a mistaken one as some of us argue is that the fact that the observer can't notice the difference means the two forces, inertial force and gravitational force, are equivalent.[176] To Mr. Einstein, such proposition, an assumption that inertial force and gravitational force are equivalent, should be promoted as an axiom, a self-evidently true statement that does not require a separate proof. But at least this author argues that there is no rhyme or reason whatsoever to assume such equivalence between inertial force and gravitational force.

So what is inertial force? An easy illustration is as follows. If you recall when you're in an airplane in the airport gangway just about to take off the land and fly to the air, the airplane accelerates, humongously, and your body pulls back due to inertia. That's what we call in this paper, inertial force, the kind of force that push you back in the direction opposite to the direction of acceleration. We'll get back to this inertial force concept later on, because it's important //:-)

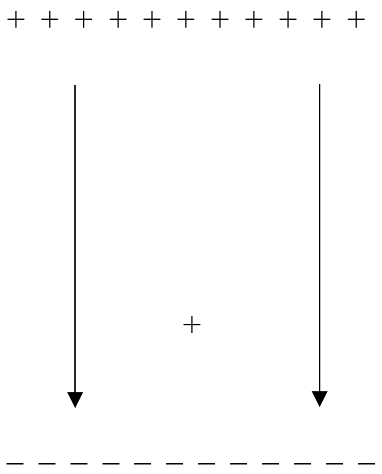
---

[176] See https://en.wikipedia.org/wiki/Equivalence_principle .

7. Comparisons between Other Forces and Gravitational Force

Now, imagine that you are in the space in a spaceship, far away from any planets or stars.

Then, we can ignore the effect of gravitational force as gravity is a very weak, small force in nature, compared to electric force or magnetic force, etc.[177] So you are in a space ship and you are conducting a physics experiment with your colleagues. Your colleague didn't tell you and you don't know the fact that your spacesuit is positively charged. The bottom of the spaceship is negatively charged and the top of the spaceship is positively charged. Then in your spaceship, there is this uniform electric field:

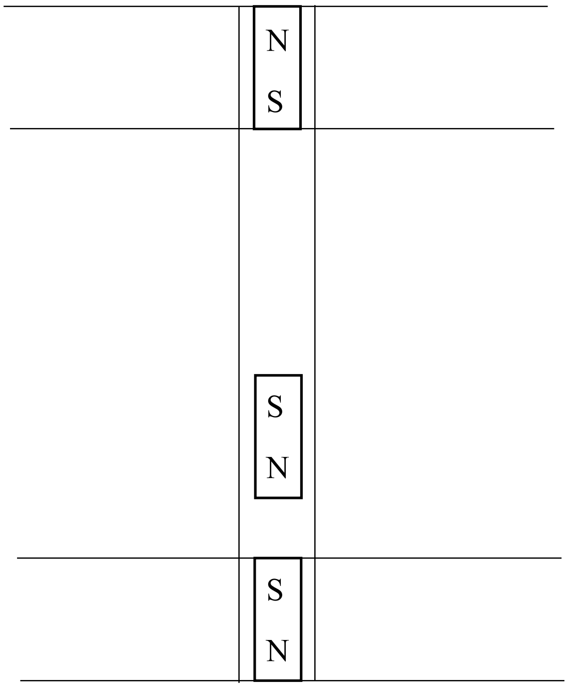


In this scenario, your body will fill the force that pushes you toward the bottom of the space ship. Will you be able to tell the difference between this electric force and gravitational force, or inertial force? Not, unless you know the fact that your spacesuit has non-zero net charge and so do the bottom and top of the space ship.

The same holds true when the force field is a magnetic one. Consider the following:

---

[177] See https://nineplanets.org/gravitational-force/ .



You are in a different space ship now. Now, unbeknownst to you, you are wearing a spacesuit whose upper part is magnetized with south pole of a magnet, and the lower half with north pole of the magnet. And you are situated inside a glass tunnel in the spaceship. You will feel the force pulling you towards the bottom of the ship but you don't know whether it is magnetic force, inertial force, electric force, gravitational force. The only thing you'll experience is some kind of force is exerting a power over you so that your body accelerates toward the bottom of the ship. And no worries, the floor of the ship is well cushioned so that you will be safe and sound //:-)

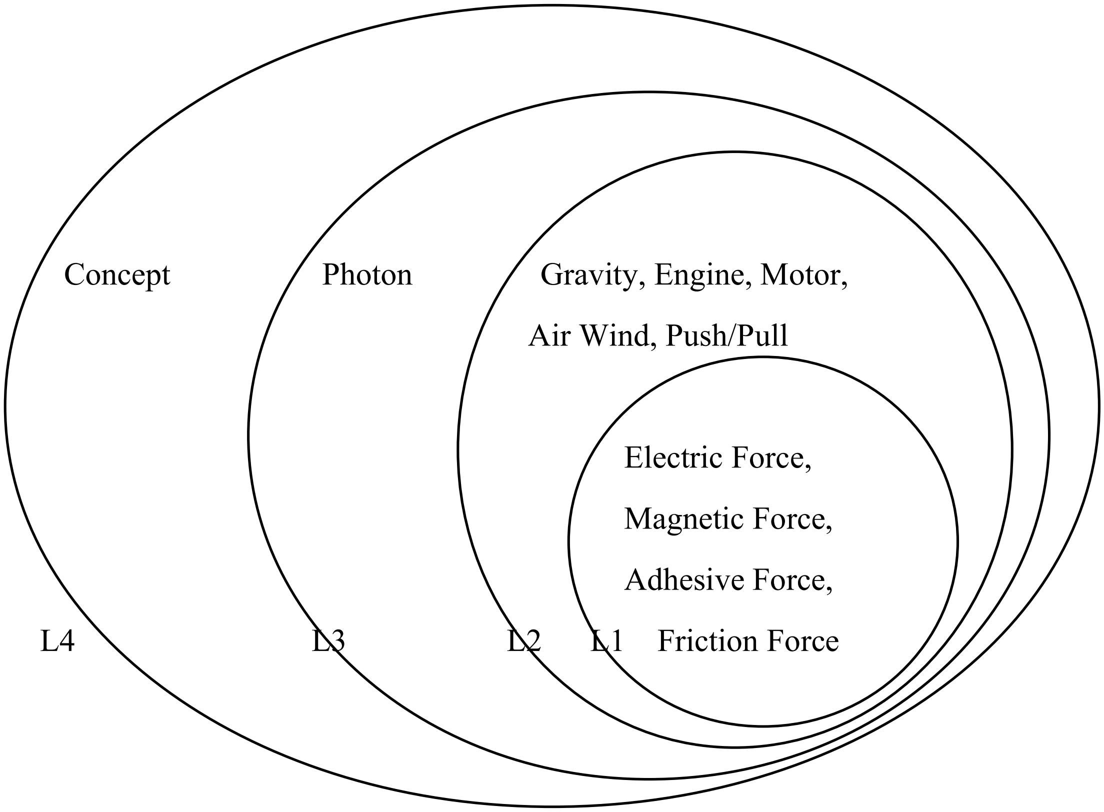
Now. Perhaps such presumed equivalence of all natural forces was what Mr. Einstein tried to theorize in his later years in so-called, the "Unified Field" theory.[178] But he failed. By now or soon at the end of this paper, ladies and gentlemen, we will know why. Why? In short, it just doesn't work //xD. Why? It is because, not all forces are equivalent to each other. Some are, some ain't. Then how exactly does it work? Well, we'll go for it in the next chapter. This author has a full-time job and he can only write so much per day, as one of his extracurricular activities //!-)

---

[178] See https://en.wikipedia.org/wiki/Unified_field_theory .

II. Hierarchy between Forces

We will model the world of forces using the set theory in mathematics.[179] There are four sets of forces: level 1 set, level 2 set, level 3 set, and level 4 set. A member of a set is a force.


Concept
Photon
Gravity, Engine, Motor,
Air Wind, Push/Pull
Electric Force,
Magnetic Force,
Adhesive Force,
Friction Force
L4
L3
L2
L1

1. Echelon One: Electric and Magnetic Forces

Forces that belong to the level one set are the kind of forces that apply to an entity that has specific property other than having a mass. For instance, for a scotch tape to exert adhesive force against gravity, the object should have a dry and firm surface. A scotch tape will not be able to stick to and lift up a piece of cake with sugar powder on top, or a wet ice cube.

---

[179] See https://en.wikipedia.org/wiki/Set_theory .

For electric force to take a dominion over an object, the object must have a net non-zero electric charge.[180] For magnetic force to have influence on an object, the object must be magnetic, like a piece of iron or a magnet. Otherwise, objects like glass or wood is not affected by electric force or magnetic force.

2. Echelon Two: Gravity, Air Wind, Engine, etc.

The level two forces govern over entities that have masses. Level 2 set is a superset of level 1 set. Imagine a runaway electron in the air. If the wind blows toward the east, will the electron get pushed toward the east? Yes. Why? It is because air wind force is generated by air molecules moving in a uniform direction and because electron has a mass,[181] though very tiny, and moving air molecules will hit and push the electron like billiard balls on a pull table. By the same token, is a magnet subject to gravity? Why yes, because a magnet has a mass and gravitational force applies to any object with a mass.

3. Echelon Three: Inertial Force, i.e., Ether Wind Force

This section is a critical one in this paper, so we will have to have subsections.

a. Ether Wind, Redefined

In this paper, we will redefine what ether is. Traditionally, ether in physics was defined as an imaginary medium that propagates electromagnetic wave in vacuum.[182] The famed Michelson-Morley experiment was designed to measure "ether wind" of the planet earth, rotating around the sun with a constant speed.[183]

In this paper, we will have a different definition of ether wind. Like a while ago, recall yourself being in an airplane when it is about to take off the ground. You feel the strong forward acceleration and your body start to pull backward, as if a strong wind if blowing towards you. By this analogy, we will call that inertial force, an ether wind force.

---

[180] See https://en.wikipedia.org/wiki/Electric_charge .

[181] See https://en.wikipedia.org/wiki/Electron .

[182] See https://en.wikipedia.org/wiki/Luminiferous_aether .

[183] See https://en.wikipedia.org/wiki/Michelson–Morley_experiment .

Now, imagine yourself being in a space ship and your space ship ran out of air in the cabin due to air leak and so you are wearing a space suit and the cabin is devoid of any kind of air. So you start the engine and hurry back to the earth and when your ship accelerates, your body will pull back and this force that pushes you back, we will call it ether wind force, or inertial force, or accelerative force.

If your ship is accelerating forward, it feels as if the rest of the universe is accelerating backward, causing the ether wind coming toward you. Ether wind force is an imaginary concept that captures this situation. In mathematics, they have what's called, imaginary number, i. The definition of i is:

$$i^2 = -1$$

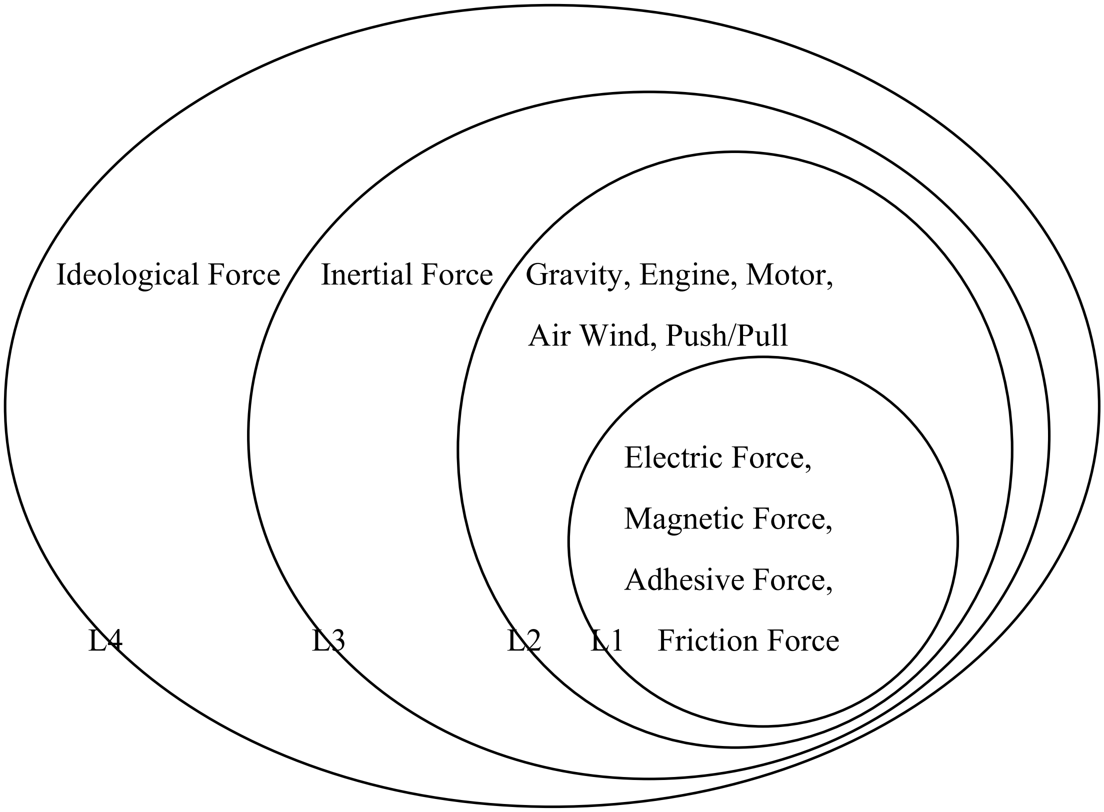
Well, more precisely, i is defined as a positive square root of -1.[184] It is a number that doesn't physically exist, but if we define such number metaphysically, it becomes a useful tool for us. Likewise, although ether wind force doesn't physically exist, it is a useful concept if we define it properly.

b. Exclusive Citizenship of a Kingdom

This subsection is also a highly critical one but we will refrain from dividing it into sub-subsections. Now, we need to step back and go back to the Venn diagram above. For convenience' sake, let us take advantage of our digital technology and copy and paste the whole thang:

---

[184] See https://en.wikipedia.org/wiki/Imaginary_number .


Ideological Force
Inertial Force
Gravity, Engine, Motor,
Air Wind, Push/Pull
Electric Force,
Magnetic Force,
Adhesive Force,
Friction Force
L4
L3
L2
L1

Now, think of a piece of wood. It is subject to friction force because it can be nailed into the wall with an iron nail and it will hang there high on the wall, against gravity. So that piece of wood will belong to L1 set, and it would be a citizen of the first kingdom. But because the second kingdom, L2 is a superset of L1, the wood also belongs to L2, as well as L3, and L4.

What if a bunch of electrons are scotch-taped onto that wood? Then it will belong to the kingdom of electric force as well, as it will be dominated by a level-1 king, electric force. The piece of wood will be a dual citizen between friction force kingdom and electric force kingdom. But it will not belong to the level 2 kingdom, because it is subject to at least one level 1 kingdom.

Then what would be an entity that belongs exclusively to level 2 set and not to any of the level 1 sets?

…

…

…

…

…

How about a wet diamond, assuming it's impossible to put a nail in it? The wet diamond will be an exclusive member of the level 2 set, because none of the forces belonging to the level 1 set has any hegemony or control over the wet diamond. But the only citizenship or membership requirement of the level 2 set is that the entity has a mass. A wet diamond has it, and thus it is welcomed in the level 2 kingdom.

Well, by exclusive citizenship to a kingdom, we mean that the citizen belongs to one echelon but to none of the echelons below that echelon. Of course, that citizen also belongs to upper echelons, if any.[185]

Now, let's talk about the level 3 kingdom and this is the highlight of this paper.

c. The Third Kingdom

Let us start by reviewing the two previous levels' sets. The citizens that belong to 1evel 1 set are the kind of objects that get controlled by the level 1 kings, or the forces that belong to level 1. The citizens that belong to level 1 and no other higher levels, they're the exclusive citizens of level 1. And the level 1 kingdoms have specific requirements. To be a resident of the electric kingdom, the object must have a non-zero net electric charge. To be a resident of the magnetic kingdom, the object must be magnetic. To be a resident of the adhesive kingdom where adhesive force is the king,[186] the object must have a dry, clean surface.

The kingdoms that belong to the second echelon have a more lenient citizenship requirement. Any level 2 forces, i.e., the kings who exert powers over their citizens, only require that an object has a mass. In this sense, all the level 2 force sets, whose members are objects that get affected by the forces of the sets, are all identical sets. The exclusive members of level 2 sets are objects that do not belong to any of the level 1 sets. That is, they are objects that are electrically and magnetically neutral, that are wet and smooth on the surface, or too brittle to stick a nail into it, like a really soft piece of cake, so that friction force cannot have any effect with a nail-in then lifting it. The examples here are rather sloppy but you got the idea //:-)

The third kingdom, which is the main topic of this subsection, is a rather new but not too new a concept of force. An example, if not the only one there is, of a level 3 force is the inertial force, i.e., ether wind force, the imaginary force that occurs whenever acceleration happens.

---

[185] See https://www.thesaurus.com/browse/echelon?s=t . Here we use the word, echelon, because it sounds cool //!-)

[186] See https://en.wikipedia.org/wiki/Adhesion . Of course, frictional force or adhesive force is not elementary forces in nature, but for our discussion, they do serve good illustrative purpose.

d. Einsteinian Elevator Thought Experiment[187]

Let us start this subsection by acknowledging that Mr. Einstein did indeed contribute to physics by asking the right questions. He answered them wrong, but where he failed, we shall prevail. Now, let us pay a visit to Mr. Einstein's elevator. Well, we don't want anyone to be hurt even in a thought experiment, so we shall redesign the thought experiment.

Let's say, a man goes to a Bungee jumping place.[188] He's an experimental physicist, so he falls right side up, with a weighing scale scotch-taped beneath his feet. As he safely falls, his weighing scale will read zero, because there is nothing beneath the weighing scale except for air and we'll ignore the effect from the resistance of the air. In this picture, the weighing scale is falling at the same acceleration as the man, so the scale will read zero weight. Does that mean the man feels nothing, as if he's out there in the space in a spaceship, away from all heavy planets or stars, and when the spaceship is not accelerating?

…

…

…

…

…

The author does not know what Mr. Einstein had said about this, because this author did not study Mr. Einstein's theory in too much detail. Now, let us focus on our answer to the question.

Assume that the Bungee man also had an accelerometer[189] attached to his belt by a cord and he reads it as he safely falls. What will be the reading of the accelerometer?

---

[187] See https://en.wikipedia.org/wiki/Einstein%27s_thought_experiments#Falling_painters_and_accelerating_elevators .

[188] See https://en.wikipedia.org/wiki/Bungee_jumping .

[189] See https://en.wikipedia.org/wiki/Accelerometer .

…

…

…

Of course, 9.8 m/s^2. How about the man? Of course he will feel it coming in the air that day[190] and it will be the air hitting his face. If he closes his eyes, he will feel as if the wind particles are hitting his face with increasing wind speed.[191]

But what if his entire falling body is wrapped up in a big plastic bubble ball, to prevent the wind blowing. Will his body feel the acceleration of 9.8 m/s^2.

…

…

…

Yes, of course. The accelerometer that he has with him is nothing but a contraption that is dialed and adjusted to measure in MKS scale,[192] the same acceleration that his body feels. Our Bungee man will feel the same kind of ethereal wind like we all experience when the airplane goes full acceleration on the runway to take us to the sky.

---

[190] See https://www.azlyrics.com/lyrics/philcollins/intheairtonight.html . //!-D

[191] Of course, even if the man travels in a constant velocity with an open-top convertible car, he will experience air molecules hitting his face, even when there is no wind that day at all. It's because his traveling east and air standing still is equivalent to his standing still and air blowing west. See https://vixra.org/abs/2009.0211 .

[192] See https://en.wikipedia.org/wiki/MKS_system_of_units .

e. The Reason for Partial Equivalence between Forces

Alright, folks. What we have is partial, not total, equivalence between forces. Let's say, you are in a chamber. The chamber has air, and a chair. You are safely seat-belted on a comfy chair with plenty of cushioning thereon. Now, your chamber is accelerating. It may be a spaceship free-falling back to planet earth, with of course a nice parachute built into the spaceship. Or your chamber is in a physics experiment laboratory and it is magnetic and the lab has a uniform magnetic field so that your chamber accelerates. Your chamber may have a net electric charge and your lab just turned on a huge capacitor to generate a uniform electric field so that your chamber accelerates. Or your spaceship may be accelerating with its jet engine in the middle of the outer space away from heavy chattels like planets or stars.

In all those scenarios, no matter what force is accelerating your chamber, yes, you will feel the same kind of accelerative force, i.e., inertial force, a.k.a., ethereal wind force, that pushes your body back toward the chair's back support, because your chamber is accelerating forward. That much is true, that much is equivalent. Why is this the case?

…

…

…

…

…

It is because, all those forces belong to level 1 or level 2, which is a subset of level 3 force. And this one level 3 force, ladies and gentlemen, is the acceleration force, i.e., the inertial force, a.k.a., the ether wind force.

Mr. Einstein may have mastered algebra, calculus and even tensor calculus, but a possibility is that he was rather unfamiliar with the set theory or formal logic in mathematics. Where he erred is that he did not realize the subset/superset relationships between forces.

f. The Level 3 Force Set

So. One of many things that we have been observing so far in our set-theoretical model of force hierarchy is as follows. The higher level we get, the force kingdom becomes more inclusive. That is, the citizenship requirement in higher kingdoms are less stringent than lower kingdoms. This concept is natural in set theory: a superset includes and encompasses all the members of its subsets. Like, an animal kingdom includes dogs and cats and apes, where canine genus only includes only dogs and exclude cats and apes, because animal kingdom is a superset of all its lower genus'.[193]

Then, what would be the criterion for an entity to be a citizen of the third kingdom? Next question: who is the exclusive citizen of the third kingdom that does not belong to lower, level 2 or level 1 kingdoms?

…

…

…

…

…

Ladies and gentlemen, at last. That one citizen of the third kingdom, is light. Light has both particle property and wave property.[194] Now, the answer for the next question. What would be the one and only requirement to be a citizen of the kingdom governed by the king, the force of inertia?

---

[193] See https://en.wikipedia.org/wiki/Order_(biology) .

[194] See https://en.wikipedia.org/wiki/Light .

…

…

…

…

…

The answer is existence in space. If an entity has a physical existence in space, occupying a certain length or width or height, then that entity is qualified to be a citizen of the third kingdom. Does the light have such things? Yes. We call it photon, but light does not have a spherical radius like an atom or electron does. What light has is wave length and amplitude, which are finite in space.

Then can you think of an entity that exists but does not occupy a physical space?

…

…

…

…

…

This is where we should start a brand-new subsection. It is because where we are at, the line we are about to cross over, is the borderline between physics and metaphysics, the one between science and philosophy.

g. The Fourth Kingdom and Its Exclusive Citizenry

Well, the fourth kingdom, all we are going to say in this subsection is that the exclusive citizens are concepts and the king of the kingdom is ideological force. We just crossed over the boundary between physics and metaphysics.[195] The subject matter here will be a whole new chapter, which we shall get to later in this paper. It's time to celebrate. Let us take a break.

//:-D

III. **Interlude**

Let us invite Mr. Einstein and have a conversation with him. It's not a thought experiment, but it's a fiction, short story, a screenplay. Ladies and gentleman, it is a great privilege to introduce to you, the great Mr. Albert Einstein-

E: … wha what is this? Where am I? And who are you?

A: Greetings, Mr. Einstein- Thank you for your time with us today, Sir.

E: Oh, it's you again. The Asian guy. The man who claims to have disproven my Special and General Relativity theories. Well, I got a news for you. You FAILED! On both ventures. Obviously you got nothing better to do in life. Am I correct?

A: lol. Just doing my job, Sir.

E: Your job? Well, hell man. It's nobody's job to disprove my proven theories. It's nobody's job. So yeah. You're right. It is your job alright, because you're nobody. Am I right?

A: Sure you do, sure you do.

E: By the way, I've read what you've been writing so far.

A: Oh thank you, Mr. Einstein, what a great honor, Sir.

---

[195] See https://en.wikipedia.org/wiki/Jordan_River#Hebrew_Bible .

E: I have a question for you.

A: Yes Sir, I got an answer for you.

E: Why on gracious earth did you name that subsection, wha what, "The Third Kingdom"? Hmm? Did you try to tell me, "The Third Reich"?[196] You must be a neo-nazi. You are antisemitic. That's why you're coming after my theories, right? Just because what, I'm Jewish?

A: No Sir. My objection to your theories has absolutely nothing to do with your ethnic heritage.

E: I don't buy it. What do you think of Hitler?[197]

A: Well, Holocaust[198] was a great tragedy and yes, it was a big mistake on Mr. Hitler's part.

E: Wha wha, did you just say "Mr. Hitler"? What the…

A: Well Mr. Einstein, Mr. Jesus said, "Judge ye not, lest ye be judged."[199]

E: Wow. You are some…. thang. I don't know what it is, but you are some big, gigantic…. like… a humongous ideological monster. Wow. You surprise me, Asian man.

A: Oh well.

E: What do you think about neo-Nazism then?

A: Well, I don't think it exists. People who say they're neo-Nazists, I think they're just playing pranks, making jokes about Jews. I don't think they're a threat to society. I don't think there exist people with criminal antisemitism these days, anywhere on earth.

E: But you hate Jews.

A: No Sir. I love Jews. I love European Jews, I love American Jews. I might add, I love apple juice and oh I love orange juice too.

E: See? You Are Antisemitic.

A: Well, I deny the charge, Sir. I'm a huge fan of bible. And it's written by Jews. Even the great Mr. Jesus was a Jew. I'm a huge admirer of Mr. Jesus. Who is antisemitic now?

E: But you hate me.

A: No Sir. I do not hate you. But, I don't admire you, but it has nothing to do with you being a Jew.

E: Ok ok ok. Who else do you hate? Are there any other Jews that what, you "refuse to admire" for the reasons other than their being Jewish?

---

[196] See https://en.wikipedia.org/wiki/The_Rise_and_Fall_of_the_Third_Reich .

[197] See https://en.wikipedia.org/wiki/Adolf_Hitler .

[198] See https://en.wikipedia.org/wiki/The_Holocaust .

[199] See https://www.kingjamesbibleonline.org/Matthew-7-1/ .

A: Glad you asked the question, Mr. Einstein. I'll tell you.

E: Yeah. Go ahead. Tell me. Tell the whole wide world how antisemitic you are.

A: Again, I'm not antisemitic. I admire Jewish orthodox people. I think they're awesome.

E: Stop dodging the question.

A: Only if you stop accusing me of antisemitism, Mr. Einstein.

E: Ok. What other Jews do you refuse to admire?

A: Well, two other European Jews come to my mind. Dr. Sigmund Freud[200] and Mr. Karl Marx.[201] And You, Mr. Einstein. The three of you are the most famous, the most celebrated European Jews in the modern history at the turn of the century. I do not agree with any three of you, gentlemen, but I do acknowledge your contributions to humanity for asking the right questions. But none of you produced the right answers. We're gonna correct your errors. This paper is about correcting your errors, Mr. Einstein. As for correction of Dr. Freud's and Mr. Marx' errors, it will be some other time, in some papers that I may write in the future.

E: Write all you want, man. Your papers will be unread, buried, and forgotten. So will you. One fine day, you will find yourself dying alone, unrecognized, unread, and then you die, and get buried six feet under. So will your lifetime's worth of works. "The" junk science. That's what this is. Am I right?

A: … Mr. Einstein, I didn't know you have some dark humor.[202]

E: Well it's no secret that I turned to the dark side later in my career.[203]

A: Ahh… so you admit it then.

E: Well, I dunno. When I did special relativity thingy, I dealt with light all the time. Too goody-goody in my taste. So I did the opposite in general relativity. A blackhole engulfing the light. How cool is that? But no, I got nothing to do with dark matter though. That's some other cosmologists. Not me.

A: So you didn't do dark matter. What do you think about "Black Lives Matter"?

E: Oh I support it of course. But I'm a Jew. I'd rather say Jewish lives matter instead.

A: I see.

E: Do you think Asian lives matter?

A: I think so.

---

[200] See https://en.wikipedia.org/wiki/Sigmund_Freud .
[201] See https://en.wikipedia.org/wiki/Karl_Marx .
[202] See https://en.wikipedia.org/wiki/Black_comedy .
[203] See https://starwars.fandom.com/wiki/Dark_side_of_the_Force .

E: You think so, huh? … Ah ha, ah ha, ah ha ha ha ha ha!

A: What's so funny, Mr. Einstein?

E: Oh. Nuthin.

A: Hmm… You ain't the real, "the" Mr. Einstein, are you?

E: What are you talking about?

A: I don't think you are who you say you are…

E: I am a male, and yes, my name is Mr. Albert Einstein. Come on, man.

A: What I'm saying is, you're not exactly a human being.

E: Are you kidding me? Of course I'm not. Who said I ever was?

A: Whoops.

E: Yeah, whoopsie dopsie pepsie you. Lemme guess. You're drinking and writing again, son?

A: lol.

E: I am not a human being. I'm a feline. My previous owner named me Mr. Einstein because my whiskers resemble the Homo sapiens Mr. Einstein's mustache or something. My previous owner didn't feed me well, so I got away.

A: Stray cat?

E: A runaway cat, rather.

A: Well. Still. It's great to chat with you, Mr. Einstein //:-)

E: You keep writing. Maybe it's worth something.

A: Oh thank you. Mighty kind of you, Mr. Einstein.

E: You bet. I'm outtie-

A: Goodbye, Mr. Einstein.

//xD

IV. The Metaphysics of the Fourth Kingdom

Well, this is mainly a physics paper, not a philosophy one, so we'll briefly touch base on the big picture and postpone the detailed discussion for a philosophy paper that will be written in the future.

1. An Analogy of an Apple

When I was in high school in Seoul, South Korea, our teacher in western history told us, "There are three historic apples in western history. Adam's apple,[204] William Tell's apple,[205] and Issac Newton's apple.[206]"

Let's pretend that we're being metaphysical descendants of Abraham, continuing the heritage and lineage of true physicists like Archimedes, Copernicus, Galilei, and Sir Newton. Mr. Einstein never talked about an apple, so we take that as an evidence that he's not legit //xD

Ok. So. An apple, you can visualize it in your head based on the memory of its visual appearance, olfactory fragrance, palatal taste, tactile texture, even the sound of biting and swallow the fantastic fruit.

Now, let's think like metaphysicists.[207] The concept of an apple, does it depend on its physical existence?

…

..

.

---

[204] See https://en.wikipedia.org/wiki/Adam%27s_apple#Society_and_culture .

[205] See https://en.wikipedia.org/wiki/William_Tell .

[206] See https://en.wikipedia.org/wiki/Isaac_Newton#Apple_incident .

[207] See https://en.wikipedia.org/wiki/Metaphysics .

Not. Well, before that, let's step back and ask ourselves. The physical existence of an apple, does it depend on the existence of a perceiver?[208] Not. Right? An apple can exist even if there is no animal or Homo sapiens to appreciate its pretty delicious awesome existence in space. The existence of an apple does not depend upon the existence of a perceiver thereof.

Now, let us take one step further into the depth of our metaphysical universe. The concept of an apple, does it depend upon "a" physical existence of an apple? In other words, is it necessary for an apple to physically exist, for the concept of apples to exist?

…..

….

…

..

.

Not really. Think of dinosaurs. They don't physically exist no more as they're extinct. But the concept of them persist still in movies or children's books and toys. A concept is a metaphysical entity and its metaphysical existence does not necessitate its physical existence. In this sense, metaphysics occupies a higher echelon than physics in the hierarchy of things.[209]

---

[208] See https://en.wikipedia.org/wiki/Existentialism .

[209] See https://en.wikipedia.org/wiki/Theory_of_everything . Though many a person tried this, they quite haven't got there. We will. It will take more than a couple of research papers but we will get there in time. Where they failed, we shall prevail //!-D

2. Metaphysics of Force[210]

Now, how can we metaphysically define what force is?

.

..

…

Well, Mr. Sir Newton defined physical force like so:[211]

$$F = ma$$

But that's definition of force in physics. But that helps. Physically speaking, force is something that changes an object's state, its velocity, but that object must have a mass.

We have discovered that a photon, which has no mass, thus which is not subject to gravitation, is still subject to accelerative force, i.e., inertial force, a.k.a., ethereal wind force. How about a concept? Is a concept of an apple subject to accelerating movement of a spaceship?

Not. A physical apple does get pushed back in an accelerating car and it may help you digest better perhaps. But the concept of apples is metaphysical and it is not subject to any physical force in the universe.

Then, our next natural question would be, can we think of a force that can change the state of the concept of an apple? What kind of force can possibly change the definition of what an apple is?

---

[210] See https://starwars.fandom.com/wiki/May_the_Force_be_with_you .

[211] See https://en.wikipedia.org/wiki/Newton%27s_laws_of_motion .

.

..

…

When this author was majoring in computer science in American Midwest in early 2000s,[212] he took a 5-credit biology class. The professor said, "they talk about GMO, genetically modified organism. But genetical modification isn't always artificial. In nature, we call such process, evolution.[213]"

In evolutionary biology, there are two kinds of selection: natural selection and artificial selection. Natural selection is known as evolution. Artificial selection is also known as selective breeding in farming, in agriculture.[214]

So why yes, the tote bag full of apples we see in grocery stores, they're not the same kind of apples that existed 5,000 years ago. Apples go through slow natural selection and fast artificial selection, and the definition or the concept, or the 'image' of an apple do change over time.

3. The Exclusive Citizen of the Fourth Kingdom: Concept

So in our set-theoretical model of force hierarchy, a set is a kingdom with a king (a force) that reigns over citizens (entities subject to the force of the set). In the fourth echelon, there is this one king that can sway its citizenry, concepts. Then, who is this king? What's his[215] name?

.

---

[212] See https://www.wisc.edu/ .

[213] See https://en.wikipedia.org/wiki/Evolution .

[214] See https://en.wikipedia.org/wiki/Selective_breeding .

[215] Please note that the author is a male and that is why he uses male pronouns, because it's easier for him. The author is not a sexist or misogynist //!-) The author will not use expressions like "he or she," "him or her," "his or her," "himself or herself," etc., because such gender neutral expression is too bulky, cumbersome, tedious, inefficient, unnecessary, and unattractive. So in this paper, a male pronoun is used to denote a generic person, like back in the good ole days. The author is a male and that's why it is easier for him to use male pronouns from a male perspective of things. If an author is a female and if she exclusively uses female pronouns, this author would understand and raise no objections. //:-)

..

…

How about ideological force? I mean, hasn't the definition of marriage changed over the past decade or so, at least for some left-leaning folks in the western hemisphere?[216] So yeah, an ideological wind force, it changes people around, and it goes far beyond that. An ideological force can even change a concept, changing its definition.

Look at the ideology of Einsteinism. It redefined what relativity means, to some people. Now we are here, to re-re-define, to restore rather,[217] the long-lost concept of relativity, in its truest sense. Ladies and gentlemen, we are witnessing a history in the making.

Alright folks, enough with dancing with metaphysics. We shall do more metaphysics in the future, in a philosophy research paper.

//!-)

V. Back to the Inertial Symmetry Axiom Theory[218]

1. An Intermediary Introduction

So the previous paper in physics was titled as such. A physics peer-reviewed journal rejected it, so this author put it in a kind and generous online database in the internet, so people can download the PDF version and read it, anywhere in the world, 24/7, in glorious yes, space and time, if they want //:-D

The previous paper was about disproof of Einsteinian Special Relativity, and this very paper is about disproof of Einsteinian General Relativity. Talk about some ambition //xD

…

---

[216] As of writing, today is 10/11/2020, 8:43pm, an autumnal Sunday evening in Alaska, USA, of all places.

[217] See https://en.wikipedia.org/wiki/Double_negative .

[218] See https://vixra.org/abs/2009.0211 . Also see https://en.wikipedia.org/wiki/Back_to_the_Future .

Anyhow. In short, Einsteinian Special Relativity is about constant velocity, inertial frame of things; Einsteinian General Relativity is about acceleration, force, etc. We acknowledge that Mr. Einstein contributed to physics and beyond, for popularizing the concept of relativity, interrelationship between space and time, though experiment, etc. He asked the right set of questions. He, like anyone else, got hits and misses. He got it right in statistical study of Brownian Motion,[219] or photo-electric effect[220] that got him the prized Nobel prize. But unlike he hit it right twice, he missed it twice in Special and General Relativities. We are here to correct the wrong, to appreciate the correct. Capisce?

Let's talk about photo-electric effect. A photon hits a metal. A photon flies away, as in a pull table in a dive bar in Alaska, the billiard balls.[221] The photon's electromagnetic wave energy gets converted into an electron's kinetic energy.

Another interesting photon's behaviorism is known as piezo-electricity.[222] It's like, if you squeeze a metal, you can squeeze an electron out of it, just like you get a glass of lemonade from a squeezed lemon //xD

So yeah. Physics is a big field of study and Einsteinian Relativity is only a very small part of physics discipline in academia.

This author is busy. This is the second paper in physics and this author wants to wrap it up in physics and move on to the topic in economics, philosophy, linguistics, and so on.

In the last paper, 39 pages long one, this author forgot to say some important things in the subject matter of inertial symmetry. So, if kind and generous readers would allow, please allow me to slide in some inertial symmetry stuffs in here.

---

[219] See https://en.wikipedia.org/wiki/Brownian_motion .

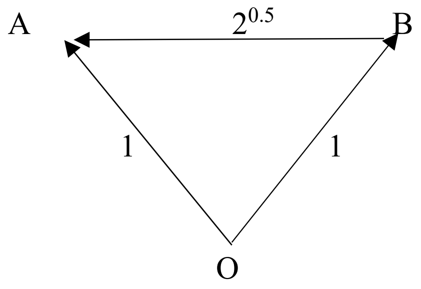
[220] See https://en.wikipedia.org/wiki/Photoelectric_effect .

[221] See https://www.dummies.com/education/science/physics/momentum-in-physics/ .

[222] See https://en.wikipedia.org/wiki/Piezoelectricity .

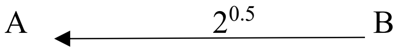
2. Equaivalence in Inertial Symmetry

As a starter, let us devise a simple scenario with three people: Adam, Brian, and Mr. Obama. Not to disrespect our former President of America, we will borrow his last name to denote a static observer, traditionally labeled as O for Origin, or zero of a coordinate system.



According to O, A is moving northwest at 1 m/s and B is moving northeast at 1 m/s. Assuming the angle between A and B's velocities are 90 degrees, A's velocity relative to B has the magnitude of square root[223] of 2, by Pythagorean theorem.[224]

But let's say, O is hiding or hidden from the view of A and B. Assume further that there is nothing in the universe except for A and B. A has a red light and B has a blue light in complete darkness in the universe. Then, the way B will perceive A's movement is that A is moving away from him at $2^{0.5}$ m/s, to his left. If B is a spherically symmetric object like a ball, then the situation becomes more direction-less: the only thing B will observe is that A is moving away from him, period. B will think he is not moving at all, because like anyone else, B is egocentric.[225]



3. The Law of Cosines Way[226]

The configuration above where B is standing still and A is moving west at $2^{0.5}$ m/s is also equivalent to a situation like so:

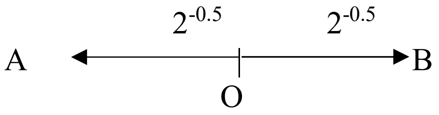
---

[223] See https://sciencing.com/the-basics-of-square-roots-examples-answers-13712463.html .

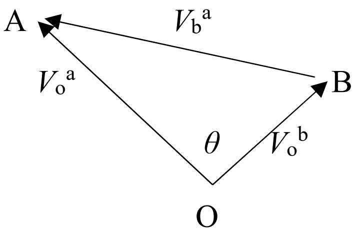
[224] See https://en.wikipedia.org/wiki/Pythagorean_theorem .

[225] See https://vixra.org/abs/2009.0211 .

[226] See https://en.wikipedia.org/wiki/Law_of_cosines .



In general, there are three variables: A's velocity, B's velocity, and the angle, θ, between the velocities of A and B:[227]



Basically, V_b^a means A's speed relative to B, and V_o^a means A's speed[228] according to O, and so on. The vector formula to calculate relative velocity vector is as follows:[229]

$$\boldsymbol{V}_b^a = \boldsymbol{V}_o^a - \boldsymbol{V}_o^b$$

For simplicity, let:

$$|\boldsymbol{V}_b^a| = V_b^a = C$$

$$|\boldsymbol{V}_o^a| = V_o^a = A$$

$$|\boldsymbol{V}_o^b| = V_o^b = B$$

Then the formula to calculate the speed scalar is as follows:

$$C = (A^2 + B^2 - 2\, A^2\, B^2 \cos \theta\,)^{0.5} .$$

---

[227] See https://en.wikipedia.org/wiki/Relative_velocity .

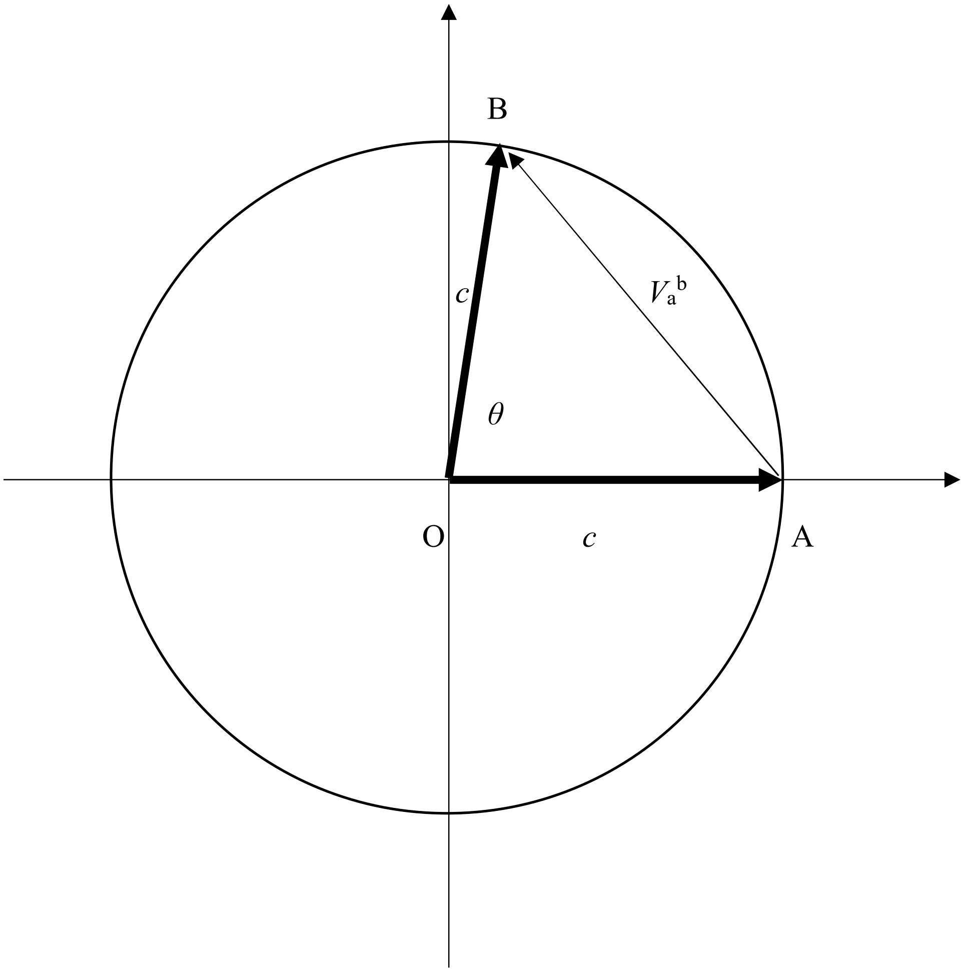
[228] See https://www.physicsclassroom.com/class/1DKin/Lesson-1/Speed-and-Velocity .

[229] A vector (velocity) is denoted with bold font, while a scalar (speed) is denoted with regular font. See http://engineeronadisk.com/notes_mechanic/staticsb3.html .

In summary, if we fix the relative speed *C*, we can pick and choose combinations of *A, B,* and θ such that such choice of three values would always result in the same *C.* Such possibilities of choices are, of course, infinite.

4. Two Photons in Inertial Symmetry Regime

In this section, we will design and conduct thought experiments in inertial symmetry way. Let's start by drawing a 2-dimensional Cartesian coordinate.



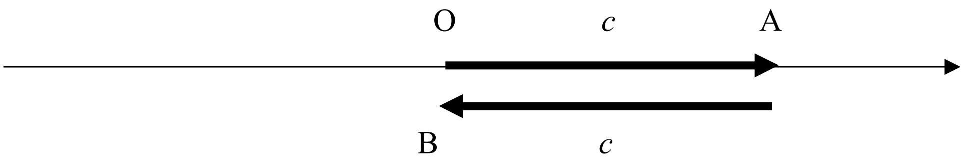
Let's say there are two photons A and B and a static observer O. A and B are traveling in light speed in vacuum, *c*, and according to O, the angle between A's and B's velocities is θ.

Then, by the way of the law of cosines,

$$V_a^{\,b} = (c^2 + c^2 - 2\, c^2 \cos\theta)^{0.5}$$
$$= 2^{0.5}\, c\, (1 - \cos\theta)^{0.5}$$

Our next thought experiment, we shall do it like a cartoon. Mr. Jesus said, "Be like children. Then and only then you can enter the Kingdom of Heaven."[230] One way to interpret the biblical verse is that we should be like children in order to enter the kingdom of true knowledge in physics.

Say, a photon is like a man, personifying the photon.[231] This photon A has a flashlight. And out of A's flashlight, the secondary photon B is coming out. A is traveling east, and A shoots the photon B to the west:



Then, to the eyes of the static observer O, the speed of the photon B is:

$$V_o^{\,b} = V_o^{\,a} - V_b^{\,a} = c - c = 0.$$

Ladies and gentlemen, we just created a standing-still photon! This photon B is not moving at all according to O. That is correct, a photon doesn't have to move at *c*. This is the true relativity.

The third thought experiment in this section is adding the third character, D for Daniel. Let's say, we add D in the picture above and D is walking west at 1 m/s, according to O. Then, according to A, the velocity of D is:[232]

---

[230] See https://www.biblica.com/bible/niv/matthew/18/ .

[231] See https://www.thesaurus.com/browse/personify?s=t .

[232] In one dimensional coordinate consisting of negative numbers, zero, and positive numbers, a scalar can also be a vector. It is because what's known as a scalar is in fact a one-dimensional vector, because a scalar can be a negative or a positive number, and such polarity creates directionality.

$$\boldsymbol{V}_a^d = \boldsymbol{V}_o^d - \boldsymbol{V}_o^a = -1 - c = -(c + 1)$$

Then the speed of D according to A is:

$$V_a^d = |\boldsymbol{V}_a^d| = |-(c + 1)| = c + 1$$

Ladies and gentlemen, we just created a man who can travel faster than light, and his speed is *c* plus 1 m/s.

5. An Afterthought after Thought Experiments

Inertial symmetry regime is egalitarian because there, we treat a photon like anything else. Inertial symmetry is also a liberating regime, because there, we are no longer confined in the Einsteinian prison where nobody's speed can't exceed the speed of light.

There is no such a thing as $E=mc^2$ or energy-mass equivalence. Anything and everything that came out of Einsteinian Special Relativity theory is false and must be rejected. Well, if one is to reach the true knowledge, in this author's opinion. But, this is a free world, so people can believe what they want. There is nothing wrong with having a religion. But, Einsteinism is a religion disguised as a science and such disguise is a falsehood, and that's why Einsteinism is a bad religion and it behooves us that it goes away.

Of course, we are not advocating book burning //xD What we are advocating is that Einsteinian Special Relativity and its progeny should be rejected in their entirety, because they are wrong and false, 100%.

Then doesn't Einsteinian Special Relativity have any redeeming value?

.

..

…

….

…..

Yes, it does. At least, Mr. Einstein's time dilation theory inspired generations of science fiction writers and filmmakers to imagine time travels[233] or time machines.[234] According to inertial symmetry theory, time does not slow down and space does not contract. I'm sorry, but there's no such a thing as time machine. But, it is an interesting concept and sci-fi writers should be encouraged to keep writing about it. //:-D

VI. Back to the Force Echelon Axiom Theory

1. A Re-introduction

The previous physics paper, "Inertial Symmetry Axiom Theory" was about replacing Einsteinian Special Relativity theory, if not disproving it. But, saying that it is an alternative theory is too weak a statement. The beginning error that Mr. Einstein committed was the assumption that the relative speed of light is constant no matter what speed the observer has. Because the entire Special Relativity is based on that one faulty assumption, the entire Special Relativity is wrong. E.g., there is no such a thing as $E=mc^2$ or energy-mass equivalence. They're all wrong.

This paper, "Force Echelon Axiom Theory" is about replacing Einsteinian General Relativity theory. The beginning error in General Relativity is what's called "Principle of Equivalence."[235] There, the faulty assumption that Mr. Einstein made is as follows. "An astronaut in a cloaked spaceship resting on the surface of the earth feels the gravity force and he cannot distinguish such gravity force from the inertial force that we would experience when the spaceship is accelerating at 9.8 m/s^2 out in the space away from any planets or stars."

Is this true?

2. A Familiar Setting

Let's say, the astronaut on the earth has a hand-held accelerometer.[236] His spaceship has no windows, so he can't see outside. But he can read his accelerometer and it reads zero, because the spaceship is parked. Later days and weeks, he is out there in the middle of the space, far away from any planets or stars. And the artificial intelligence computer[237] of his ship starts the ship's engine and the ship begins accelerating.

---

[233] See https://en.wikipedia.org/wiki/Back_to_the_Future .
[234] See https://en.wikipedia.org/wiki/The_Twilight_Zone .
[235] See https://en.wikipedia.org/wiki/Equivalence_principle .
[236] See https://en.wikipedia.org/wiki/Accelerometer .

He feels the acceleration in his body, which is safely tightened with a seatbelt. And he reads the accelerometer, which reads 9.8m/s^2. As one can easily see, Mr. Einstein was wrong again, in such an elementary, basic way. Gravitational pull is fundamentally different from inertial pull and they are not equivalent. A weighing scale operates differently than an accelerometer. Even a human body can tell the difference between gravitational pull and accelerative pull.

On earth, the astronaut's weighing scales reads the man is 180 lbs., and his accelerometer reading is zero. Out in the space, when the ship is accelerating at 9.8m/s^2, his weighing scale behind his back reads the man weighs 180 lbs., but this time, the accelerometer also reads 9.8m/s^2. This is a huge difference between gravitational force and accelerative force. They are not two equivalent forces and they are easily distinguishable forces. The man can tell the difference between the two forces by the way they feel, and the accelerometer can tell the difference as well. Alas, Mr. Einstein couldn't tell the difference. But that does not mean the two forces are equivalent. That means Mr. Einstein was wrong.

3. Symmetric Velocity

Let's say, the planet earth is the static observer. According to earth, you are standing still. According to earth, air wind is blowing at 10 m/s. You feel the air molecules hitting your skin.

Next scenario, the air is standing still relative to earth. And you are running at 10 m/s on earth. Then, the air molecules are hitting your skin at 10 m/s. The two scenarios are symmetric, equivalent, and indistinguishable. That's inertial symmetry theory. It's basically a restoration of Galilean relativity, but we go beyond Mr. Galilei. Slightly so.

Slightly how so? We're basically saying that a man running east at 10 m/s in a static universe is equivalent to the rest of the universe moving west when the man is standing still. That is, the earth spinning around its axis in a static universe is equivalent of the universe rotating around the static earth. Mr. Galilei said, "the earth rotates." We are saying, "the sun rotating the earth, the earth rotating the sun, they're the same thang. So Mr. Galilei, and the Christians of your days, you were both correct."

Of course, there are more than one planets around the sun, so Galilean, Copernican way of thinking is by far more efficient and simpler way of thinking of planetary movements, and science prefers efficiency, simplest explanation.[238]

Now, let's go back to a spaceship with a window this time. The spaceship's window is transparent, so the lone astronaut can watch the beauty of the universe, including twinkling stars far, far away. And since they're far away, it's as if they're standing still, which provides him a handy dandy tool, the static observer, the static universe. And his ship is moving toward the north star.

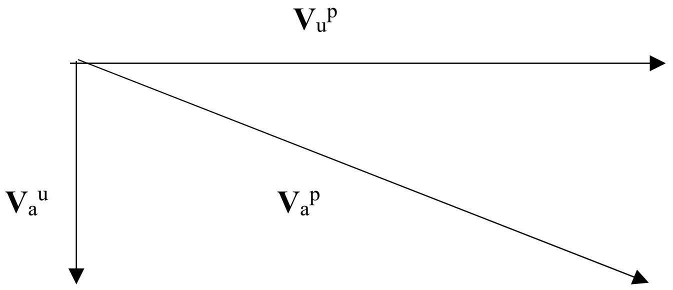
---

[237] See https://en.wikipedia.org/wiki/HAL_9000 .

[238] See https://sco.wikipedia.org/wiki/Occam%27s_razor .

Relative to the static universe, the spaceship is going north at 10 m/s. Then there enters a photon through the ship's western window. The photon is traveling east. Then, to the astronaut, the photon's trajectory will look as if the photon is traveling southeast. It is because the ship moving north is equivalent to the rest of the universe moving south, from the astronaut's point of view. It is because for Adam the astronaut, it's more convenient to think that he is standing still, because Adam is, like anyone else, egocentric.

That mirroring velocity of the rest of the universe traveling south, when Adam wants to think he's standing still, we will call such reflective velocity, a symmetric velocity. More precisely, we may call it the symmetric velocity of the universe, according to Adam's egocentrism or ego-staticism. Then, the trajectory of the photon is a vector summation of the photon's southbound 10 m/s, and its eastbound *c* m/s.



That is, in vector algebra,

$$\mathbf{V}_a^p = \mathbf{V}_a^u + \mathbf{V}_u^p$$

4. Symmetric Force

Symmetric force is like Newtonian action-reaction pare of forces,[239] but not exactly. How not exactly? It's because we go beyond Newtonian thinking, just like we went beyond Galilean viewpoint. Do we go beyond Einsteinian thinking? Well, we accredit Mr. Einstein for asking the right questions, but we reject his answers both in Special and General Relativities. What we do here is go back to Galilean/Newtonian frameworks and then move beyond them.

---

[239] See https://en.wikipedia.org/wiki/Reaction_(physics) .

Now, let us get back to the basics once more. Or many times more to come. That's the spirit of Cartesian inquiry.[240] So. Imagine yourself sitting in an airplane with seatbelt on. The airplane is in its runway, standing still. And there is this tennis ball on the aisle up front, staring at you and this ball is not wearing any seatbelt. As the airplane accelerates, what you observe is the tennis ball rolling toward the aft of the airplane with an acceleration. Of course, you feel the ethereal accelerative inertial wind force blowing at you as well.

Assuming that all the windows are closed and that you are egocentric like anyone else, you'd rather conveniently think that you are sitting still and what's moving is the ball and this ball has an acceleration. Ignoring fricative effect of the carpet and air, the ball will be accelerating toward the tail of the airplane at the same acceleration as the airplane.

Assume that the ball has a special GPS tracker inside and an observer at the airport is tracking its location. During the time between the airplane's rest and the time when the ball hits the back wall of the airplane's interior, ignoring friction effect, what would be the airport observer's observation of the ball's movement?

.

..

…

….

…..

To the airport's observer, the ball has been standing still for that duration relative to the airport, while you the airplane passenger have been observing the ball traveling, accelerating from the front of the aisle to the back of the aisle, relative to the airplane's floor. This is the symmetry of acceleration.

Let's talk about the Newtonian action-reaction perspective. The force generated by the airplane's engine is creating the airplane's acceleration to move forward. But you feel that you're being pushed backward against the back support of your seat. That much is action-reaction. Engine's forward push is paired with inertial force that pushes you backward.

---

[240] See https://en.wikipedia.org/wiki/Cartesianism .

But when it comes to photon, the Newtonian action-reaction concept cannot quite address the picture very well. Why? It's because photon has no mass and the Newtonian definition of force presumes the existence of mass, like so:[241]

$$F = ma$$

5. Trajectory of a Photon

We do owe Mr. Einstein's good designing of his thought experiments. It's just that his imagination went south later on //xD So. Let's get back to the spaceship away from any stars or planets where gravitational effect can be ignored.

Your phenomenal spaceship has windows so that you can see the wonders and majesty of the universe. And stars and galaxies are so far away, so that in your eyes, they're standing still and they serve you as a static frame of reference.

In this ship, the back of the ship is the floor and your armchair is heading the top of the ship and you are sitting awkwardly looking up, facing north. And the height of the window measured from the floor is h.

Relative to the universe, your ship is accelerating with a m/s^2. Then, a photon gets into your ship from your western window. You observe the photon's trajectory. It would be a parabolic curve, not a straight diagonal line like before, because your ship is no longer having a constant velocity, but it's accelerating toward the north star. Why parabolic? Let's recall what we learned in school days and review it, shall we?

We need to set up some variables. Say, the photon's horizontal velocity is c, as usual. It's vertical velocity at a given time t, let's call it v. And t At a given time t, let's say the photon has traveled x meters horizontally, and y meters vertically. Then, all we need to do is to find out a nice equation where both x and y appear.

For all we know,[242]

$$x = c\, t$$

$$y = h - v\, t - a\, t^2 / 2$$

$$v = a\, t$$

---

[241] See https://en.wikipedia.org/wiki/Newton%27s_laws_of_motion .

[242] See https://courses.lumenlearning.com/boundless-physics/chapter/projectile-motion/ .

Then, we know:

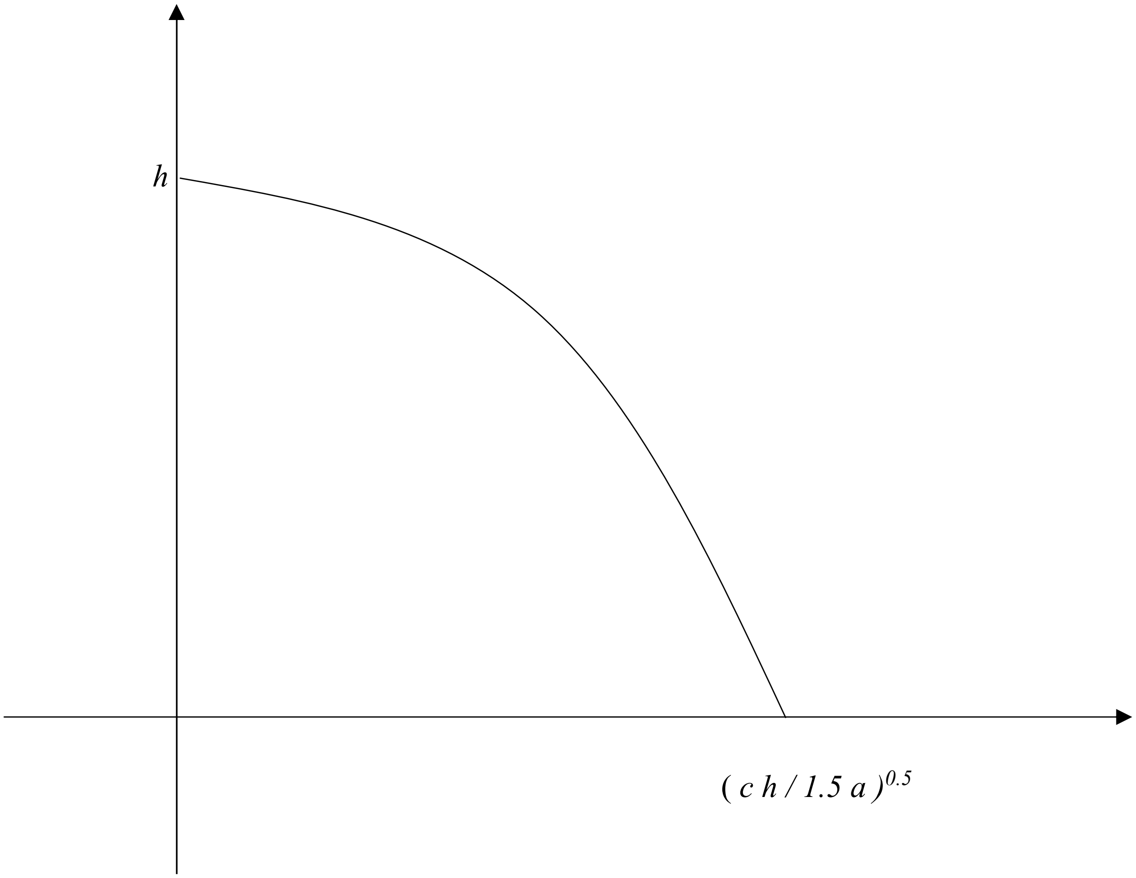
$$t = x / c$$

$$y = h - a\, t\, t - a\, t^2 / 2$$

$$= h - 1.5\, a\, t^2$$

$$= h - 1.5\, a\, x^2 / c$$

Long story short, the trajectory of the photon who sneaked into your accelerating ship, shooting for the north star, looks like this:



6. Other Settings with Different Forces

a. Engine Force

Before we start talking about other forces, let's get back to the spaceship and its jet engine's propulsive force. The engine uses fossil fuel, which has chemical bonding energy.[243] Such energy gets converted into mechanical work energy, like so:[244]

$$E = W = F\, s = m\, a\, s$$

Then, we can calculate the acceleration of the ship, as:

$$a = E\, /\, (\, m\, s\,)$$

Of course, s is the distance that the ship travels during the acceleration of the ship.

One thing we should remind ourselves is that the photon that seems to be accelerating toward the ship's floor in the astronaut's eyes, is actually not moving in y-axis, according to a static observer outside the accelerating ship. Remember the tennis ball on the aisle floor of an accelerating airplane? To the static airport observer, the ball is standing still, and it's the airplane that's accelerating. To the passenger in the airplane, it's the ball that's accelerating toward the back of the airplane, because the ball is not tied down and we ignore the fricative effects.

Now, to the astronaut, the photon seems to accelerate toward the floor of the ship, but photon has no mass. Then how do we calculate such photon's acceleration relative to the astronaut?

.

..

…

---

[243] See https://en.wikipedia.org/wiki/Bond_energy .

[244] See https://en.wikipedia.org/wiki/Work_(physics) .

This is where symmetry concept kicks in. The acceleration of the photon relative to the ship/astronaut is symmetric to the ship/astronaut's acceleration relative to the static universe' frame. It's just that the photon is not moving vertically, when the astronaut is moving. So in the egocentric eyes of the astronaut, the photon is moving.

But since we're not dealing with inertial movement (constant velocity) anymore, it's not inertial symmetry. It's accelerative symmetry. Or symmetric acceleration, is what the photon has, in the eyes of the astronaut. And such acceleration is simply the same acceleration that the astronaut reads on his accelerometer. If the photon has its own accelerometer, of course its reading will be zero.

b. Acceleration in Electric Force

Electric charge is about relative numbers of electrons and protons in an object.[245] If there are five electrons than protons in an object, the object has a net charge of -5, and it's no longer neutral, but polarized, and it transforms the 3D space around it with electric force field.[246] But since both electrons and protons have mass, an electric charge necessitates a substrate mass to reside in.

That is, electricity cannot exist without an underlying object with a mass. This is the key difference between a photon and electrically charged object: a photon occupies a finite space with its wavelength and amplitude, but it does not require an object with a mass for the photon to sit on. A photon can even exist in vacuum.

Now, let's go ahead and calculate the acceleration of a charged particle in an electric field:[247]

$$F = k\, q_1\, q_2 / r^2 = m\, a$$

$$a = k\, q_1\, q_2 / (\, m\, r^2)$$

That is, if q_1 is free to move around on a frictionless floor and it has a negative charge, and if q_2 is fixed on the floor and has a positive charge, then q_1 will move toward q_2 with acceleration of a when the distance between the two objects is r.

---

[245] See https://en.wikipedia.org/wiki/Electric_charge .

[246] See https://en.wikipedia.org/wiki/Electric_field .

[247] See https://en.wikipedia.org/wiki/Coulomb%27s_law .

c. Acceleration in Gravitational Force

Let's bring up the storied Newton's universal gravity equation to calculate acceleration of an object with mass, *m*, attracted to a by far bigger object, *M*:[248]

$$F = G\,m\,M / r^2 = m\,a$$

$$a = G\,M / r^2$$

Observe that in the acceleration above, there is no term of *m*, which used to exist in the acceleration generated by an electric force field.

As you can see, all these forces are different. There are similarities but there are undeniable differences. The imaginary accelerative force, which the astronaut observes as the force that pushes him backward and that even pushes the photon in the ship toward the floor of the ship, that inertial force doesn't even require the photon to have a mass. Inertial force, i.e., accelerative reactionary force, also we nicknamed as ethereal wind force, is not equivalent to gravitational force. Why?

.

..

…

….

…..

It's because gravitational force requires an entity to have a mass, while inertial force requires an entity to have spatial existence.

---

[248] See https://en.wikipedia.org/wiki/Newton%27s_law_of_universal_gravitation .

d. Einsteinian Fallacy

The academic discipline of logic has been in existence for millennia.[249] But, the modern development of mathematical logic was still developing in Mr. Einstein's days.[250] So it's unfair to fault our dear Mr. Einstein for not knowing enough about set theory[251] or formal logic or first order logic[252] or informal fallacy theory[253].

The error Mr. Einstein committed is known as hasty generalization, faulty generalization, or hasty conclusion.[254] Yes, there is a definite similitude, even mathematical identity, between light's trajectory in the accelerating spaceship and the parabolic trajectory of a tennis ball being tossed off a house's window. But, similitude is not equal to identity, or equivalence. Between inertial force and gravitational force, there are similarities and there are differences. The fact that two things are similar does not mean the two things are identical or equivalent.

What Mr. Einstein did in postulating the "equivalence principle" was not a leap of faith, but a leap of fallacy.[255]

e. Some Other Forces that Claims Hegemony over Photons

So Mr. Newton defined force as:

$$F = m\,a$$

As we noted earlier, this definition is insufficient, because force can apply to an entity without a mass, like photon. So we need to come up with new definition of what force is.

Simply put, force is something that changes an entity's velocity. Velocity can be conceptually defined as:

$$Velocity = Speed + Direction$$

---

[249] See https://en.wikipedia.org/wiki/Logic .

[250] See https://en.wikipedia.org/wiki/Mathematical_logic#History .

[251] See https://en.wikipedia.org/wiki/Set_theory .

[252] See https://en.wikipedia.org/wiki/First-order_logic .

[253] See https://en.wikipedia.org/wiki/Fallacy#Informal_fallacy .

[254] See *Ibid.*

[255] See https://en.wikipedia.org/wiki/Formal_fallacy , especially the sections about illogical jump, a.k.a., *non sequitur.*

More generally, a vector can be defined as:

$$Vector = Quantity + Directionality$$

As we all know, velocity is a vector with speed as its quantitative component and direction as its qualitative component.

So. A force can change an entity's direction only, without changing its speed. For instance, the gravitational force of the sun changes the direction of the earth's tangential velocity, but not its speed.[256] Sometimes a force changes an entity's speed only, but not its direction. An example is a charged object speeding up in a straight line in a uniform electric field.

Now, let's talk about photon. We already have seen a photon being blown away, speeding up with acceleration, by the accelerative inertial ethereal wind force, in the eyes of an astronaut in an accelerating spaceship. But that's not the only occasion that a photon changes its velocity. There are other forces out there that can change a photon's direction or even speed. Can you think of one perhaps?

.

..

…

….

…..

Well, it's easy actually. Think of a mirror. Say, imagine a perfectly reflective theoretical mirror. Then this mirror will bounce off a photon, without changing its speed, only changing its direction. How about a theoretical black body[257] that can stop a photon, reducing its speed to zero, converting the photon's electromagnetic energy into a heat energy?

---

[256] See https://en.wikipedia.org/wiki/Circular_motion .

We can also think of a force that changes a photon's speed, but not velocity. What would it be?

…..

….

…

..

.

How about an entity as mundane as water? Or even, air? Or glass? Or a glass of water? //xD
If a photon dives into the water with a perfect 90 degree angle, then the photon only slows down but it does not change its direction.[258]

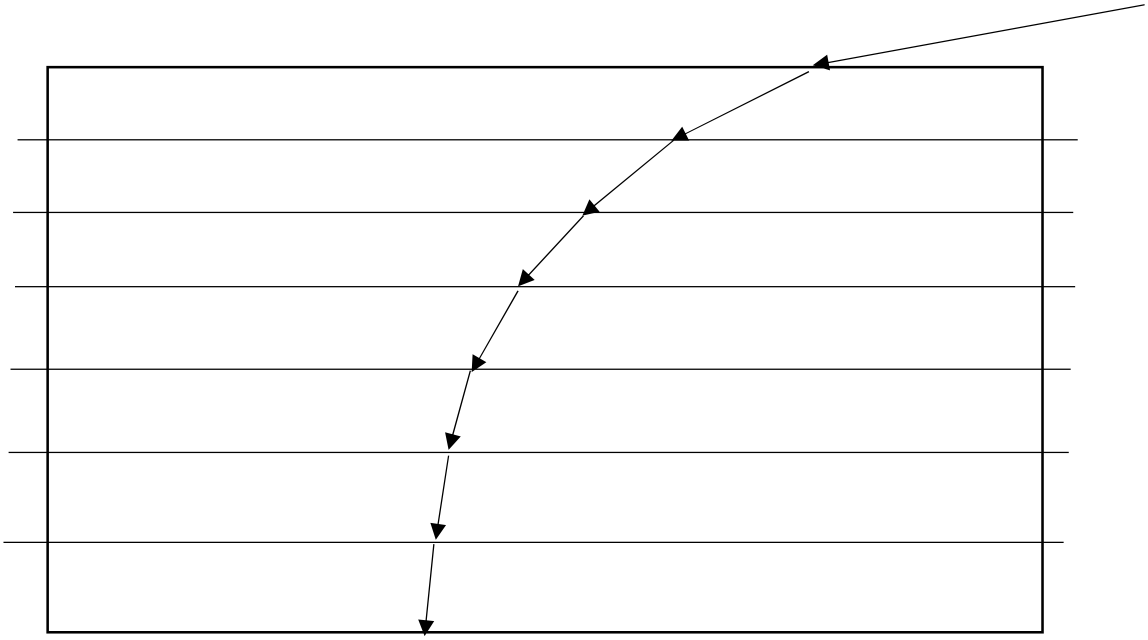
The thing is, a photon does slow down in a transparent medium. How much it slows down depends on the medium's density.[259] So let us design an experiment. Let's say, we have multiple slabs, an array of thin glass containers stacked on top of each other. And each slab contains saline water, and the density of the salt in those slabs vary. The top slab has no salt, just pure water. The second slab below has a bit of salt in it. The third slab has more salt, and so on. So let us draw a diagram to see how a photon travels in this setting.

---

[257] See https://en.wikipedia.org/wiki/Black_body .

[258] See https://en.wikipedia.org/wiki/Refraction .

[259] See *ibid* .



As we can see, the picture becomes a familiar one: a parabolic trajectory. If we slide the six separating thin glasses out of the way, the salt water will start to slowly mix and for a moment, we will have a smooth gradient of thickening salt water as the photon travels downward. At that moment, the photon's trajectory will make a smooth, differentiable curve.

What kind of force is this, that can change the direction of a photon? Well, it's not exactly a friction force, as a photon has no mass, but it does look like friction force. No matter what name we give to that force, we can come up with a more generic definition of what force is. And here it is:

$$F = k\,a$$

Here, we merely substituted k for m from Newton's formula, because not every entity has a mass, but some kind of force can still apply to that entity.

Here, we only dealt with a photon, an entity without mass, but an entity still subject to some forces out there. Are there some entities other than photons, that are subject to some forces? Yes, there are. And here we are again, crossing over from the universe of physics, to the universe of metaphysics. That metaphysical universe is what we shall revisit and explore in more depth in the next, final chapter of this paper.

VII. The Metaphysics of the Ideological Force Field

1. Intermission

Wow. We've come a long way together, haven't we? Let us pat ourselves' backs and take a good break that we've earned by studying so hard //xD

How about a gig? Like, acting? Yeah. Let's do it.

…..

….

…

..

.

So basically, we're saying that just because a person is a scientist, we can't just take the scientist's words as an absolute truth, because scientists, they're humans too. Thus, scientists may make mistakes and may even lie.

S: Wha wha wha wha wait a minute, stop it right there. How do you know scientists err or lie? You ain't even a scientist.

A: Uhh….who are you?

S: I am a scientist.

A: Oh. Okay. Well, welcome to the the the…this. Welcome to the discussion, Mr. Scientist.

S: You you you you don't know what you're talking about. That's your problem, you American Asian Alaskan Aging A**.

A: Well. You're a scientist, so let's talk science.

S: No. I am "the" Scientist.

A: Okay, so let's talk some science.

S: First of all, your paper su**s. It's a cr** sh**. See what I'm sayin'?

A: Well, I respect your opinion, Sir.

S: Mr. Einstein was "the" real scientist. You ain't. You're a wannabe.

A: Hey, if you say so. But I say this. Mr. Einstein didn't got the right attitude. He was arrogant. He thought he defeated Sir Mr. Newton and he paid a visit to Mr. Newton's grave and he said, "Mr. Newton, I'm sorry." That was such a presumptuous and conceited gesture. He thought he was right but we proved him wrong.

S: You live in an imaginary world inside your cubby hole. You're an Asian a** hole. Am I right?

A: I am an Asian and yes, I do have an organ dedicated for defecation.

S: Ha!

A: So would I pay a visit to Mr. Einstein's grave?

S: Then what, commit a misdemeanor by discharging your yellow liquid over it?

A: Oh no. I was gonna say, well first of all, I don't know where his grave is. Second of all, I have neither money or time to visit his grave. So no, I won't visit his grave.

S: See? You're rude.

A: But,

S: But what?

A: I won't say "I'm sorry, Mr. Einstein, we proved you wrong." I will not say that. Because we are not sorry for disproving him.

S: Then what are gonna say to him?

A: I will say, "Mr. Einstein, we thank you. We thank you for asking the right questions. It's just that you made wrong answers. But hey, even you, 'the' Mister Einstein is a human being and you, like anyone else, make mistakes sometimes."

S: Oh?

A: Yes. He made two errors. First, in his special relativity, he assumed that the relative speed of light is constant regardless of speed of observers. Everything in his special relativity is based on that one assumption. Since we proved that assumption is false, his entire castle of special relativity collapses like an array of dominos, or a deck of cards. We've done that in our previous paper, *Inertial Symmetry Axiom Theory*.

S: Oh. That. I haven't read it.

A: Highly recommended.

S: I won't read it.

A: Just a suggestion.

S: Ok. Go on. What's his second error?

A: Before we go on with this, I do apologize to the people in the whole wide world, if I offended their sentiments. Mr. Einstein has huge followings, a huge fan base. Many schools, hospitals and museums and libraries are named after him.

S: So are you saying we should rename them and burn his books?

A: lol. *ell no.

S: I thought you're mealy-mouthed. Not. You're dirty. You're dirty-mouthed.

A: Well. Whatever. I also do apologize to the scientists who dedicated their younger days and youths and careers studying and developing his relativity theories. I'm sorry to them. That, yes, I do say it. I'm sorry.

S: Apology unaccepted.

A: Well.

S: No worries. Your papers, including this one, shall go unnoticed. No one shall pay attention to this or that paper. Amen. Say amen to it. It. Say it! Or else!

A: Whatever, Mr. Scientist.

S: So let's hear it. What's the second error?

A: The second error, of course, concerns his general relativity. He assumed that the inertial force is equivalent to the gravitational force. His entire general relativity is based upon that one assumption. We disproved that key assumption, and again, the entirety of his general relativity collapses. Ladies and gentlemen, there is no such a thing as a black hole.

S: But there is a such a thing as an a** hole. And that's you. You are it. You're an a** hole.

A: Mr. Scientist. Please. My advice? Be nice.

S: Be deserving of me being nice to you, Sir.

A: Surely will I do so, Mr.

S: So. What else?

A: So you're a scientist?

S: No. I am "the" Scientist. Address me as "the" Mister Scientist please.

A: Ok. "The" Mister Scientist, with Mr. fully spelled out.

S: Yeah right. I am "the" Mister Scientist. And you are "the" Satanist. "The" 666. "The" Antichrist perhaps.

A: Why do you say that?

S: Because your mouth is full of blasphemy and sacrilege, offending the god of physics.

A: Oh, I get it. To spice things up, you wanna pour some religious juice into this paper, huh? Well, we'll get to it. Wait for the next section *et seq*.

S: No. We got no time for your s***ty paper.

A: Well that's your choice, the Mr. Scientist Sir.

S: You are a destructionist, a vandalizer. You spray all over the walls of the cathedral of Einsteinian Special and General Relativity Theories. You even urinate over his grave.

A: I never did. And never will I commit such a misdemeanor. I'm a law-abiding citizen of the United States. I am a well-behaved gentleman.

S: No Sir. You're nobody. You're a big nutty nuthing. You got your ambitions, which will amount nuthing. Mark my word: nuthin'.

A: Whatever you say, the Mr. Scientist.

S: You are an anti-Christ.

A: How so?

S: Because Mr. Einstein is our savior, you dummy!

A: Oh. Okay. So according to you, Einstein equals to Jesus. And if I'm anti-Einstein, I'm anti-Jesus. Since Jesus equals Christ, I'm anti-Christ? Is that what you're saying?

S: Bingo Jingo Hallelujah!

A: Well, the thing is, I'd say I'm more Shiva-ist. The Hinduist god of destruction, Shiva. Hallelujah Nirvana, RIP.

S: I don't think so.

A: How about a creative destructionist? A constructive destructionist perhaps. Look. If there is this old house occupying space, we gotta demolish it and build a new house, because the old one is sitting on a very expensive piece of real estate, like MIT or Harvard or Yale or Stanford or Princeton. Einsteinian relativity theories are wasting all these men and women's precious time. And how about the memory space of people's brains? I don't care what schools they have attended or not. People's brain space, nothing is more precious than that and it's being wasted with wrong theories like Mr. Einstein's special and general relativities. I wanna put a stop on all that nonsense and that's why I did what I did. I should be regarded as a hero, not a villain.

S: A hero? Huh. Hero my a**.

A: The Mr. Scientist, please. Would you watch your mouth before you utter those words?

S: How can I watch my mouth, you Asian man? Can you watch your mouth, literally, without a mirror?

A: Well, figure of speech.

S: Whatever man. Gotta go. I gotta stash some nuts before winter comes, so.

A: ….huh?

S: Are you drinking and writing again, Asian?

A: Hey, I'm at home and I ain't going nowhere today. It's a holiday today, so.

S: I am the Mr. Scientist.

A: Then you make mistakes too, because you're a human being. Making mistakes, that's human nature and human condition. No human being is perfect.

S: Wha wha wha wait a minute. Who said I'm a human being?

A: You said you're a scientist.

S: No, The Scientist.

A: Whatever. You're the scientist, so you're a human. A human subject to errors and lies and deceptions. You don't instantly become a deity or a saint after your get your Ph.D.

S: Who said I got Ph.D.? What is Ph.D. Is it a nut? A species of a nut tree? I heard the term, nutty professor before.

A: … Why are you so obsessed with nuts?

S: Cuz that's all I eat, you dummie hommie.

A: ……. are you…. a squirrel?

S: Of course I am. No. I am "the" squirrel, "the" Mister Scientist The Squirrel.

A: I didn't realize squirrels study science.

S: Who said we ever did?

A: …you don't?

S: He** no, man. Why would I or other squirrels study f***ing science? F*** science.

A: Then why do you call yourself, The Mister Scientist?

S: It just is my name. I used to be a pet to this mad scientist back in the days once. He stopped feeding me. One day, I ran away. He named me, "The Mister Scientist." So I got stuck with it.

A: Oh. That explains.

S: K dude. Gotta go before snow comes. Gotta gather up all the nuts and hide them before winter comes. Adios!

A: Good-bye, The Mister Scientist The Squirrel. By the way, there's nothing to worry about. The new theory in physics replacing old ones, it's always been that way if you're familiar with the history of science. It's part and parcel of evolution. It's a continuing entertainment event.

We're not firing anyone, we're not eliminating any jobs, we're not burning books or renaming buildings. We're, however, indeed, making a revolution right here and right now. But it's a bloodless one, a cost-free one. Some say the best thing in life is free. So yeah. It's free. Take it or leave it. It's people's choice whether they accept the new theory, whether they depart from the old one. It's people's rights, freedom, free will, liberty and justice and truth for all.

//xD

2. Ideological Force Field and Its Denizens, the Concepts

…to be continued in the next research paper…

Epilogue[260]

Hello everyone, thank you for your kind and generous readership //:-D We hope you enjoyed the show. Our next article to write and publish will be titled, "Metaphysics and Physics-the Parallel Universe between Philosophy and Science." There, we'll introduce some more interesting concepts.[261]

Thank you for your time and see you later, kind and generous ladies and gentlemen //:-)

---

[260] This paper was started being written on 9/30/2020. It was finished being written on 10/23/2020 //:-)

[261] See https://en.wikipedia.org/wiki/The_Road_Not_Taken .

Metaphysics and Physics: the Parallel Universes of Philosophy and Science[262]

Huhnkie Lee[263]

An analogy between metaphysics and physics is introduced. We will discuss phenomena in history, philosophy, politics, religions, ideologies, activisms in a unified framework. This could be 'a', if not 'the', unified field theory[264] *or theory of everything*[265] *//:-)*

Prologue

Hello everyone, thank you for your kind and generous readership //:-D This is a research paper, but I will keep it as entertaining as possible. Please enjoy-

I. Review and Preview

8. Concepts from Previous Papers

In our previous paper,[266] we presented an alternative to, if not a disproof of, Einsteinian General Relativity theory.[267] We'd rather call it a replacement theory. Basically what we said there is that we should regard it as an axiom that forces form a system of hierarchy, where each echelon constitute a set of forces and each echelon set is a superset of lower echelon sets.

---

[262] This paper is dedicated to the author's family members and friends who also played parental figures, eternal inspirers, continuing educators, and spiritual mentors to him in being there for him when no one else was, who corrected him when he was wrong, and who taught him life lessons and everlasting wisdoms. Started being written on 10/26/2020.

[263] A lawyer by trade, a mathematician by hobby, a U.S. Army veteran by record, a former computer programmer, a prior PhD candidate in computational biology, a former actor/writer/director/indie-filmmaker/background-music-composer. Born in the USA, 1978.

[264] See https://en.wikipedia.org/wiki/Unified_field_theory .

[265] See https://en.wikipedia.org/wiki/Theory_of_everything .

[266] See https://vixra.org/abs/2010.0192 . Although this author has reached the conclusions of this paper and the previous paper, there have been serious attempts and perhaps successes, if not widely accepted, to disprove Einsteinian Relativity theories. For instance, see https://www.goodreads.com/author/show/268911.Scott_Reeves .

[267] There are some indirect evidences that seem to suggest that there might be something wrong with Mr. Einstein's Special and General Relativity theories. See http://www.ccsenet.org/journal/index.php/apr/article/view/0/41490 ; https://en.wikipedia.org/wiki/Ladder_paradox#See_also . They say those paradoxes were 'resolved,' but at least this author is not convinced. For instance, the resolution of twin paradox seems to rely on the sole fact that the twin who stays on earth does not undergo acceleration while the traveling twin does. Well, the thing is, according to Special Relativity, the time dilation will still accumulate whether the traveling twin is accelerating or deceleration, as long as his speed is faster than the zero-speed of the static twin on earth. So the argument of the 'resolution' still makes the result that the traveling twin will still age more slowly than the standing still twin. They say it's due to the asymmetry that the static twin didn't experience the acceleration while the traveling twin experienced acceleration. See https://en.wikipedia.org/wiki/Twin_paradox . But we can easily modify the twin paradox to get rid of acceleration part. Say twin A and twin B were born at the same time when B's eastbound,

In the previous-previous paper,[268] we contended that the inertial symmetry of two objects moving with constant speeds should be accepted as an axiom, i.e., that the objects' relative speeds are equivalent and indistinguishable. That is, a velocity of an object can only defined in relation to another object and there is no such a thing as an absolutely static observer and in a two-object universe, it is impossible to tell who is being static and who is moving. An egocentric observer will think he is standing still and the other object is moving away from him, or coming toward him. And the other egocentric observer will think the same way, and the two observers' ways of thinking are equivalent and they're both right, because there is no third absolutely static observer in the universe.

9. Concepts in This Paper

So in the previous paper, we experienced a bit of scope creeping.[269] The final chapter, Chapter 7, of the previous paper was left blank with a promise that we shall continue in the next paper, and this paper is that next paper //:-)

In the previous paper, we defined force as:

$$F = k\ a$$

What we did by changing m to k is to expand Newtonian definition of force such that the new definition of force can accommodate the force that can exert its influence over entities that does not have any mass, e.g., a photon.

In other words, a force is an entity that changes the velocity of another entity. An velocity has two components: speed (quantity) and direction (quality). A photon can slow down

---

constant-velocity rocket was passing by A's planet. After a year in A's time, A's one-year old but B will be less than 1-year-old because B's been traveling with some speed. But in B's point of view, B's been standing still, but A's been traveling westbound and it's should be A who's younger than 1-year old. This is the contradiction that's been explained in the previous-previous paper. The so-called 'resolutions' of the Einsteinian relativities tend to be overly defensive, advocative, haphazard, and patch-work-y. This author gets this impression that they're being apologetic, aggressively defensive as advocates of Einsteinian Relativism, as if they're defense attorneys fending off accusations of paradoxes, as opposed to be objective scientists. If you think about it, Einsteinian Relativism is probably 'the' one theory with the most paradoxes. Why is that? … .. . This author's guess is that it's because it's a wrong theory.

[268] See https://vixra.org/abs/2009.0211 .

[269] See https://en.wikipedia.org/wiki/Scope_creep .

in a transparent medium like air, water, or glass[270]. So this force that changes the speed of the photon, we can name such force as 'medium force' or 'ethereal friction force' or whatever.

A photon can also change its direction when it bounces off of a perfectly reflective mirror. We can name such force as 'reflective force'. A photon can come to a complete stop when its electromagnetic energy gets converted into heat energy when it hits a perfectly black body[271], which is a theoretical object invented in thermodynamics that can absorb light without any reflection.

In this paper, our operative premise is that the metaphysical universe mirrors the physical universe. We will explore the universe of invisible metaphysics in analogy to the visible physical universe. Let the journey begin.

II. The Velocity of a Concept

1. Review from the Previous Paper[272]

In the previous paper, we dealt with the 4-tiered hierarchy of forces. The topmost set of forces, we named it the set of ideological forces and we said their exclusive members are concepts. And we observed that the physical existence of an apple does not depend on the physical existence of an observer, meaning that an apple can physically exist even if there is no one to appreciate its existence.

Next, we observed that the metaphysical concept of an apple does not depend upon the physical existence of an apple. That is, even if all the apple trees go extinct, the concept of an apple may persist, survive. We don't have any dinosaurs now but the concept of dinosaurs still outlives the physical existence of them in books, encyclopedias, novels, and also in movies, cartoons, in children's toys and books. How about unicorns, phoenix, or sphinx? They never once existed physically, but their concepts metaphysically have existed since some people imagined them and materialized them in stories or paintings or sculptures.

2. Two Components in a Concept

Say, the concept of an apple has two components. First, the concept of an apple has an apple's definition. What is an apple? It's a round fruit with tart and sweet taste and its diameter is about 3 inches. The second component of the concept of an apple is its polarity, or its one-dimensional direction. That is, is an apple good or bad? It's good. Apples are good because they're healthy edibles with vitamins and minerals and fibers. And they're inexpensive and they're tasty.

---

[270] See https://en.wikipedia.org/wiki/Fiber-optic_cable .
[271] See https://en.wikipedia.org/wiki/Black_body .
[272] See https://vixra.org/abs/2010.0192 .

Let's step back a little and think about what a vector is, what a velocity is:

$$Vector = Quantity + Directionality$$

$$Velocity = Speed + Direction$$

In the first equation above, we could have said,

$$Vector = Quantity + Quality$$

Well. There we said it. It's pretty much the same thing in this context, so. Now, we can now say:

$$\begin{aligned} Concept &= Definition + Direction \\ &= Definition + Polarity \\ &= (Quantity, Quality) \end{aligned}$$

We can adopt the tuple notational convention,[273] but we'll stick with equality/summation convention when we write a metaphysical equation, for simplicity.

So, we're saying definition is like quantity or speed, whereas direction is more like quality. There are only two directions in one-dimensional space: plus or minus; positive or negative; good or bad. So that analogy makes sense. But isn't a definition more qualitative than quantitative?

.[274]

---

[273] See https://en.wikipedia.org/wiki/Tuple ; https://mathworld.wolfram.com/n-Tuple.html .

[274] The dots are designed to allow our dear readers to think independently about the question for a second or two, if they so desire. //:-)

..

…

….

…..

Well, let's recall how we defined an apple[275]. We talked about its size, taste, color, etc. What a color in RGB scale?[276] In RGB model, colors are defined like so:

Red = (255, 0, 0)

Green = (0, 255, 0)

Blue = (0, 0, 255)

Yellow = (255, 255, 0)

White = (255, 255, 255)

Apple Color = (200, 50, 7)

So yeah, the color part in the definition of an apple can be defined quantitatively like above. How about taste? Well, the taste can be defined as follows:[277]

Taste = (Bitterness, Sourness, Sweetness, Saltiness)

Apple Taste = (10%, 30%, 50%, 10%)

Of course, an apple's size can be defined by:

---

[275] See https://en.wikipedia.org/wiki/Apple .

[276] See https://en.wikipedia.org/wiki/RGB_color_model .

[277] See https://en.wikipedia.org/wiki/Tongue_map .

Size = (Height, Width, Length)

Apple Size = (3 inches, 4 inches, 3 inches)

If we combine the above results together, we have a jagged matrix[278] model of the definition of an apple like so:

Fruit = (Color,

Taste,

Size)

$$Apple = \begin{pmatrix} 200 & 50 & 7 & \\ 10 & 30 & 50 & 10 \\ 3 & 4 & 3 & \end{pmatrix}$$

So yes, the definition part of a concept is very much quantitative.[279]

3. Evolution of the Concept of an Apple

In Alaska where this author resides and in Asia where he used to live, there's this fantastic wild apples called crab apples.[280] Probably like hundreds of thousands of years ago, a typical apple size was like 1 inch in diameter, just like crab apples'. Via selective breeding[281], a.k.a., artificial selection, apples over the thousands of years of human agricultural cultivation and farming practices, increased in size and sugar content. Compared to wild, relatively un-evolved wild crab apples, the apples we buy in groceries are bigger and sweeter. That is, the definition of an apple changed over time.[282]

Not only that, the species and subspecies of apples increase in time, artificially or naturally. Artificial evolution tends to be faster than its natural counterpart, of course.[283] So.

---

[278] See https://en.wikipedia.org/wiki/Jagged_array ; https://en.wikipedia.org/wiki/Matrix_(mathematics) .

[279] See https://en.wikipedia.org/wiki/Quantum .

[280] See https://en.wikipedia.org/wiki/Malus .

[281] See https://en.wikipedia.org/wiki/Selective_breeding .

[282] See https://en.wikipedia.org/wiki/Evolution .

[283] See https://en.wikipedia.org/wiki/Genetically_modified_organism .

Over time, the definition of what apple is, become more inclusive, as brand-new species of apple appear and the number of kinds of apples increases over time. This is yet another reason why the definition part of a concept is quantitative. In general, as a concept evolves in time, its definition expands.

Another example? Look at math. Back in the days, there were two branches in Western mathematics: algebra[284] and geometry[285]. Nowadays, there probably are hundreds, if not thousands, of branches and subbranches in mathematics.[286]

Now, let's talk about the direction part of the concept of an apple. Was an apple always a good thing?

…..

….

…

..

.

Well, it kinda depends on what religious traditions and interpretations you subscribe to, but according to some traditional interpretation, the apple used to be the one and only fruit that people were forbidden from eating.[287]

Well, jovial jolly jocund history aside, the point is, the direction of a concept changes over time. Is an apple a good thing or bad thing? If Adam is going to eat an apple in the Garden of Eden, is he going in the right direction or not? Probably not, right? But if Mr. Charlie Chaplin in 20th century America is eating an apple, he doing the right thing? Well, it depends on whether he bought it or stole it. //xD We talked enough about apples, so let's move on.

---

[284] See https://en.wikipedia.org/wiki/Algebra .

[285] See https://en.wikipedia.org/wiki/Geometry .

[286] See https://en.wikipedia.org/wiki/Mathematics ; https://en.wikipedia.org/wiki/Wikipedia:WikiProject_Mathematics/List_of_mathematics_articles_(C) .

[287] See https://en.wikipedia.org/wiki/Garden_of_Eden ; https://en.wikipedia.org/wiki/Forbidden_fruit .

III. The Force that Changes the Velocity of a Concept

1. Ideological Force: Definition

So, so far, we have learned that force is an entity that changes the velocity of another entity and the change in velocity can be the change in its direction, or its speed, or both. This chapter will be quite exciting and exotic to all of us, because it's something quite new.

We also learned that a concept can be regarded as a metaphysical velocity, where a concept's speed is the concept's definition and the concept's polarity is the concept's direction.

We also learned that a concept evolves over time as a concept's definition and a concept's polarity change over time.

So, if a concept's speed and direction change, that means there is something that causes such change of the concept's velocity. And we will call such causer of a concept's velocity, an ideological force, or simply, an ideology.

2. Ideological Force: Illustrative Examples

This section will be either entertaining to some or offensive to others, because we will deal with real-world ideological examples that we are familiar with in this year of 2020.

Well, how many of you smoke cigarettes? Anyone? Perhaps this author is the only one //xD

Back in the days in America, smoking cigarettes was deemed a hip, fashionable thing. For instance, Mr. Rod Sterling of the Twilight Zone TV show routinely would smoke one in the post-episode narratives and so did many of the characters in the show.[288]

So we have at hand the definition of a tobacco plant as a one-dimensional array of DNA letters like ATGC.[289] Basically, a species can be defined as a base-4 number,[290] if we simply substitute 0, 1, 2, 3 for A, T, G, C. So that's the definition of a tobacco plant, a number, a quantity.

Now, the quality or polarity or directionality of a tobacco is what we are interested in now. Tobacco[291] smoking has a long history across time and space, or spacetime, a.k.a., culture. In American 50's and 60's, tobacco smoking was probably not regarded as such a horrendous vice like it is now in year 2020. So what happened over the past seven decades or so is the gradual strengthening of the metaphysical force field of anti-tobacco-ism. The ideology of antitobaccoism is the force that changed the velocity of the concept of tobacco. Tobacco used to be a positive concept seven decades ago, but nowadays, it's mostly a negative concept.

---

[288] See https://en.wikipedia.org/wiki/The_Twilight_Zone_(1959_TV_series) .

[289] See https://en.wikipedia.org/wiki/DNA ; https://en.wikipedia.org/wiki/Genome .

[290] See https://en.wikipedia.org/wiki/Radix .

[291] See https://en.wikipedia.org/wiki/Tobacco#History .

3. Ideological Set and Its Members

As we've defined already, an ideology is a metaphysical force that changes the velocity of a concept. Let's step back and review what an electric force is. An electric force field is stronger if a charged object has a bigger net charge.[292] Analogously, an ideological force field is stronger when there are bigger number of people who subscribe to that ideology.

For example, the antitobaccoism is an ideology, or an advocacy, against the use of tobacco.[293] Who subscribes to that ideology? Perhaps a former smoker who quit smoking since he got a lung cancer diagnosis, or family members and friends whose beloved ones got a lung cancer diagnosis.

But, anti-tobacco-istic campaigns and advertisements cost money. Who fund those, what entities are behind them, who's the money man behind the curtain of those ads and marches?

.

..

…

….

…..

One possibility is perhaps health insurance companies have motivation to reduce cigarette smoking in order to reduce the number of people who go to hospitals for tobacco-related illnesses and spend health insurance money.

---

[292] See https://en.wikipedia.org/wiki/Electric_charge ; https://en.wikipedia.org/wiki/Electric_charge .

[293] See https://en.wikipedia.org/wiki/Tobacco_control ; https://en.wikipedia.org/wiki/Truth_(anti-tobacco_campaign) ; https://en.wikipedia.org/wiki/World_No_Tobacco_Day .

Another possibility is snacking companies who sell snacks loaded with refined sugar and oil-rich ingredients. The reason is, both nicotine-rich-tobacco[294] and sugar/fat-rich-snacks[295] have calming effects. They're both relievers of stress and pain. People have only so much money. So a market competition forms between snack manufacturers and tobacco manufacturers.

Yet another possibility is the pharmaceutical companies that manufacture psychoactive drugs, i.e., prescription drugs. By the way, one question: is there any drinker in the house? Perhaps this author is the only one again //xD In America, the decline in popularity of tobacco smoking in the past century parallels that of alcohol consumption. Both tobacco-alcohol and psychoactive-drugs are analgesia of mental stresses. People have only limited money. Again, a market competition forms. Pharmaceutical industry has an incentive to suppress and denigrate alcohol-tobacco consumption.

Are these all conspiracy theories? lol. Logical conjectures, rather. //!-)

IV. Advocacy, Ideology, Concept

1. A Metaphysical Equation

A metaphysical equation is neither a mathematical nor a physical equation, but it is a conceptual equation in analogy to equations in physics or mathematics. We introduced the concept in the previous-previous paper.[296] While we're at it, let's add another one in our catalogue of metaphysical equations:

$$\textit{Advocacy} = \textit{Concept} + \textit{Ideology}$$

$$\textit{Pro/Anti} \qquad X \qquad \textit{ism}$$

Above, *X* is the concept variable. Pro- and Anti- are the directions. Ideology is the force. Without passing a judgment, let us think about gay marriage.[297] Pro-LGBT-ism, or progayism for short, has, to some people but certainly not all, changed the concept of marriage, i.e., the definition of what marriage is, how marriage is defined.[298] Of course, such ideological redefinition of marriage can change again as certain ideologies do not have eternal lifespan.

---

[294] See https://en.wikipedia.org/wiki/Nicotine .

[295] See https://en.wikipedia.org/wiki/Comfort_food .

[296] See https://papers.ssrn.com/sol3/papers.cfm?abstract_id=3701959 .

[297] This author is a Christian Republican Conservative and thus oppose the ideology of LGBT-ism, but his view on the issue is not important for the purpose of this research paper //!-)

But the thing is, the definition of marriage has changed multiple times in human history.[299] Back in the days in both the West and the East, polygamy was common, as men used to go to wars and there were more women than men in population as only men would go to wars and many of them pass away in battles.[300]

As human world has developed agricultural revolutions and technological advancements, there came to an age where the world has enough food to feed all people, and nations stopped invading each other and the war stopped. So in the population, there are roughly same number of men and women in these modern days of peace, and marriage has been redefined as a union between one man and one woman.

An advocacy group members, a.k.a., activists, are advocates by tautological definition. Activists are in a sense like lawyers who take sides, as opposed to impartial judges or jurors in a trial.[301] In an adversarial judicial system like the one we got in America,[302] a plaintiff has an attorney, and a defendant has his/her own attorney.

Progayism not only attempted to change the definition of marriage, it also attempted to change the polarity of gayism, i.e., homosexuality.[303] Progayism is an advocacy ideology and it also attempted to reinterpret, if not rewrite, the human history. For instance, progayist advocates argued that the friendship between David and Jonathan in bible was a homoerotic one, often dubbed as 'bromance.'[304] Some even contended that the friendship between Gilgamesh and Enkidu[305] was also a homoerotic.[306]

The aggressiveness of progayism may be surprising to some, but such reshaping of existing concepts is what an ideological force does.[307] Changing the definition or the polarity of a concept is precisely what an ideological force does, according to our definition aforementioned.

Well, enough for the social commentary //xD. Let us get back to the metaphysics, the eternal, the unchanging. We will elaborate on the previous metaphysical equation of ours, like so:

---

[298] See https://en.wikipedia.org/wiki/Same-sex_marriage .
[299] See https://en.wikipedia.org/wiki/Marriage .
[300] See https://en.wikipedia.org/wiki/Polygamy .
[301] See https://en.wikipedia.org/wiki/Trial .
[302] This author dwells in Alaska, America, of all places //:-D
[303] See https://works.bepress.com/huhnkie_lee/3/ .
[304] See https://en.wikipedia.org/wiki/David_and_Jonathan .
[305] See https://en.wikipedia.org/wiki/Epic_of_Gilgamesh .
[306] See http://bettermyths.com/gilgamesh-and-enkidu-ultimate-bromance/ .
[307] Having said that, it might be rather fair to say that the usage of the class of appellations that the either side of the ideological dividing line say to each other exhibits the general paucity of civility of the generation that we're living in, in this day and age, and such is a rather regrettable development to observe.

$$\begin{array}{ccccc} & & \textit{Definition + Polarity} & & \textit{Size + Goal} \\ & & \| & & \| \\ \textit{Advocacy} & = & \textit{Concept} & + & \textit{Ideology} \\ & & \| & & \| \\ & & \textit{Velocity} & & \textit{Force} \\ & & \| & & \| \\ & & \textit{Speed + Direction} & & \textit{Strength + Direction} \end{array}$$

What we have here above is nothing but a summary of what we discussed so far.

An ideology is a generic term to denote metaphysical force that exerts influence on concepts. In physics, there are many kind of forces such as gravitational force that act on objects with mass, electric force that sways objects with net electric charges, and magnetic force that changes the trajectories of objects with magnetism.

Ideologies work the same way. What ideology changes is the velocity of concepts, that is, either or both of definitions and polarities of concepts.

Now, how about people? Don't ideologies change how people think about a concept? Yes, they do. That will be the topic of the next section.

2. Ideologies and the People

Again, without passing a value judgment on things, let's talk about communism, shall we? Communism advocate for communal property, as opposed to private property, hence the name.[308] In a large scheme of things, the U.S., of all places, has adopted and integrated communism in its system. How so? Think about tax. Social security, social welfare, Medicaid, Medicare, are all about this communal, big pool of money funded by taxpayers. Insurance funds, pension funds, bank's savings account fund, even big corporation's funds are other examples of big communal pool of money that people can borrow from when they need some big money in the times of needs and those money pools are all communal properties.

Now, way back when communism was the king in some parts of the world, they used to use this term, 'reactionary.'[309] The word usage is reminiscent of action-reaction in Newtonian framework,[310] of course, and it is not a coincidence. Basically, a reactionary in communist jargon refers to a person who resists the communist revolution.

---

[308] See https://en.wikipedia.org/wiki/Communism .

[309] See https://en.wikipedia.org/wiki/Reactionary#20th_century .

Let's take a more recent example. When progayism was introduced and became a mainstream ideology in America during President Obama's administration since 2008, progayism characterized antigayists as bigots, religious fanatics, the uncivilized, the unenlightened, the haters, or the ignorant people.[311] Again, we shall reserve value judgment on either side of the ideology, as this is not a political propaganda paper, but a scientific research paper //!-)

The question is, why do some people resist a certain ideological change in society?

.

..

…

….

…..

The key can be found in no other than Mr. Sir. Isaac Newton's storied equation:

$$a = F / m$$

Here, F stands for the present, contemporary external ideological force to change a person's view on a concept. m stands for the mass, the inertia formed in an individual's past.

In politics, an aged person tends to be more conservative, while a young person tends to be more liberalistic.[312] One possible explanation can be achieved from our next, rather surprising, metaphysical equation:

---

[310] See https://en.wikipedia.org/wiki/Reaction_(physics) .

[311] See https://www.salon.com/2013/03/25/how_to_stop_anti_gay_bigots/ .

[312] See https://www.psychologytoday.com/us/blog/mr-personality/201410/why-are-older-people-more-conservative .

$$m = k\, t$$

That is, metaphysical mass, i.e., metaphysical inertia, is proportional to, none other than, time itself.

Think about it this way. In elections, typically a voter votes for a candidate with whom the voter spent the most time with, be it personal interaction during social events, door-to-door knocking campaigning or mass-mail campaign pamphlets or media advertisement in radios, TVs, or internets.[313]

Young people are malleable and pliable and parents can control or change or shape their young children with ease, of course, when we compare the situation where we want to change people who are older than ourselves, like our parents and grandparents.

Of course, the present time becomes the past in a second. In every second of our lives, the time passes us by in the eternal direction toward the future. At the present time that we are living in, there are contemporary ideologies who want to change us. These ideologies are external to us. But, we internalize those externalities by remembering them, by storing them inside our brains in the form of memory.[314]

Over time, as we age, we accumulate an increasing corpus of memories, our observations, influences, they're all stored in our memories. The entire universe of the world past, is stored in our brains and that is what constitutes the metaphysical mass, the metaphysical inertia.

If an ideological force is strong enough, it can overcome an individual's inertia and change the person's concept. As we have observed in the past two decades or so, many Americans have converted from antigayism to progayism. President Obama's two predecessors, President G.W. Bush and President Bill Blinton, were antigayists.[315] President Obama and his proponents, including U.S. Supreme Court Justices managed to change the polarity of the concept, gayism, in many Americans.[316]

The size of an ideology can be loosely defined as the number of people who subscribe to that ideology. But, there's more to it, of course. For instances, ff the president of the U.S. or the U.S. Supreme Court Justice subscribes to the ideology of progayism, it probably gives the ideology more boost to the ideology than a less prominent person would have.

Then how can we precisely define the magnitude of the vector, the ideological force? Well, we'll have to defer it to the next section //:-)

---

[313] See https://papers.ssrn.com/sol3/papers.cfm?abstract_id=3701959 .
[314] See https://en.wikipedia.org/wiki/Memory .
[315] See https://en.wikipedia.org/wiki/Defense_of_Marriage_Act .
[316] See https://en.wikipedia.org/wiki/Obergefell_v._Hodges .

3. Recursive Definition of the Magnitude of Ideological Force

a. Ideology and Celebrity

Ideology is a force vector and a vector has two components: magnitude and direction.[317] The magnitude of ideology, i.e., the strength of an ideological force and roughly be defined as the number of people who subscribe to that ideology. In this sense, our definition is a composite one: an ideology is not only a vector, but also a set.[318]

One thing to note when we measure and define how strong an ideological force is, is that not all members of the ideological set have equal weights. For instance, if celebrities like President Obama[319] or Justice Kennedy[320] or Pope Francis[321] or Lady Gaga[322] endorses progayism, such endorsement or ideological subscription would have more impact on people as opposed to a nameless person like this author would.[323]

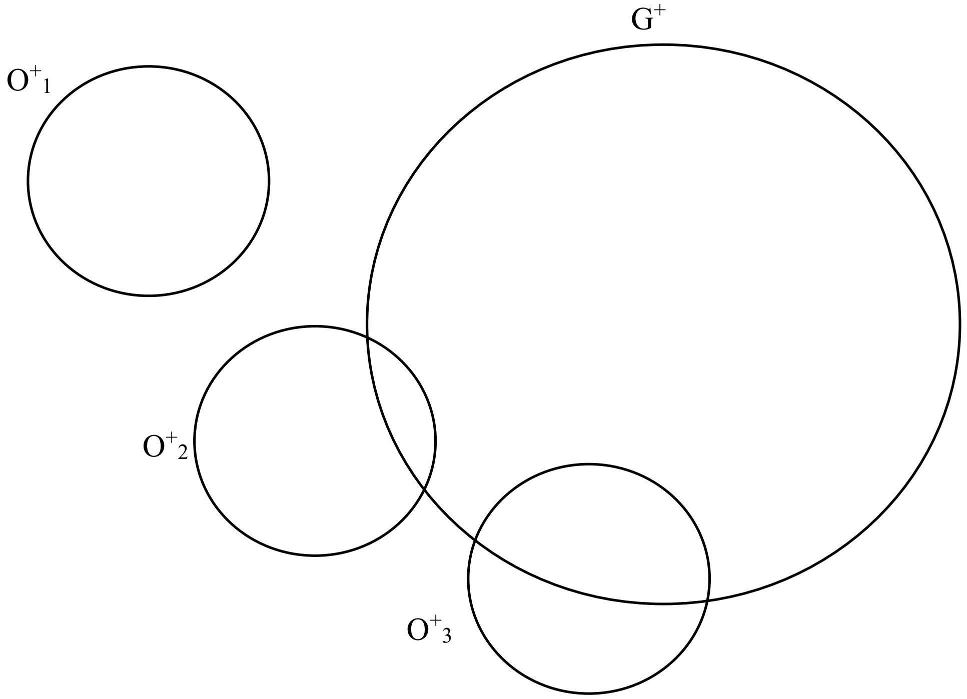
When a person becomes famous, the person becomes an idol, a concept, and such fame may outlive the person's biological existence on earth. A celebrity's name and life become eternalized in periodicals, newspaper archives, and encyclopedias like Wikipedia. It is as if, the person becomes a celestial body or a star, hence the word, celebrity.

b. Dynamic Set Theory

What we are doing here is to use mathematics in order to model a metaphysical phenomenon.[324] Traditionally, Venn diagram[325] has been used to describe static relationship between set. What we introduce in this subsection is dynamic set theory, where we introduce a time variable to the set theory. Let us illustrate like so:

---

[317] See https://en.wikipedia.org/wiki/Vector_(mathematics_and_physics) .
[318] See https://en.wikipedia.org/wiki/Set_theory .
[319] See https://en.wikipedia.org/wiki/Barack_Obama .
[320] See https://en.wikipedia.org/wiki/Anthony_Kennedy .
[321] See https://en.wikipedia.org/wiki/Pope_Francis .
[322] See https://en.wikipedia.org/wiki/Lady_Gaga .
[323] Again, this author does not endorse progayism, for clarification //xD
[324] See https://en.wikipedia.org/wiki/Mathematical_model .
[325] See https://en.wikipedia.org/wiki/Venn_diagram .



Here above, G^+ is the set of progayism where its members are the people who subscribe to progaysim, meaning, they approve the ideology LGBT$^+$-ism.[326] Next, each of O^+_1, O^+_2, O^+_3, means the pro-obama-ism set at time 1, time 2, and time 3. The fact is, then-U.S. Senator Obama of the State of Illinois hadn't always been a progayist, and there was a time when he was an antigayist.[327] Later on he became a progayist. Was it a political move on his part? To get elected in 2008 presidential election? The ideological acrobatics by President Obama closely parallels that of President Trump. Then-Mr. Trump hadn't always been a pro-life-ist.[328] Was it a political move that then-Candidate Trump migrated from pro-abortion-ism to anti-abortion-ism, in order to secure Republican Party's presidential nomination and to secure Christian American's votes in 2016 Presidential election? It's a possibility.

Well, politics aside, the dynamic Venn diagram above illustrates Mr. Obama's ideological trajectory. Let's say, well. It's all a hypothetical scenario. Nobody knows for sure what Mr. Obama was been thinking. Politicians are known to say things that they don't necessarily believe in. That much is a matter of common sense that we can all agree on //xD

---

[326] See https://en.wikipedia.org/wiki/LGBT .

[327] See https://time.com/3816952/obama-gay-lesbian-transgender-lgbt-rights/ ; https://www.politifact.com/factchecks/2012/may/11/barack-obama/president-barack-obamas-shift-gay-marriage/ .

[328] See https://www.newsweek.com/donald-trumps-views-abortion-roe-vs-wade-his-own-words-1534954 ; https://www.mic.com/articles/167090/wasn-t-trump-once-pro-choice-here-s-the-president-s-evolving-platform-on-abortion .

Now, back to the Venn diagram. Let's say, a lot of people voted for Mr. Obama's U.S. Senate election in Illinois. They're the members of the pro-obama-ism set at time 1, conveniently denoted as O^+_1. One of the supreme powers of mathematical language is its succinctness and sweetness.

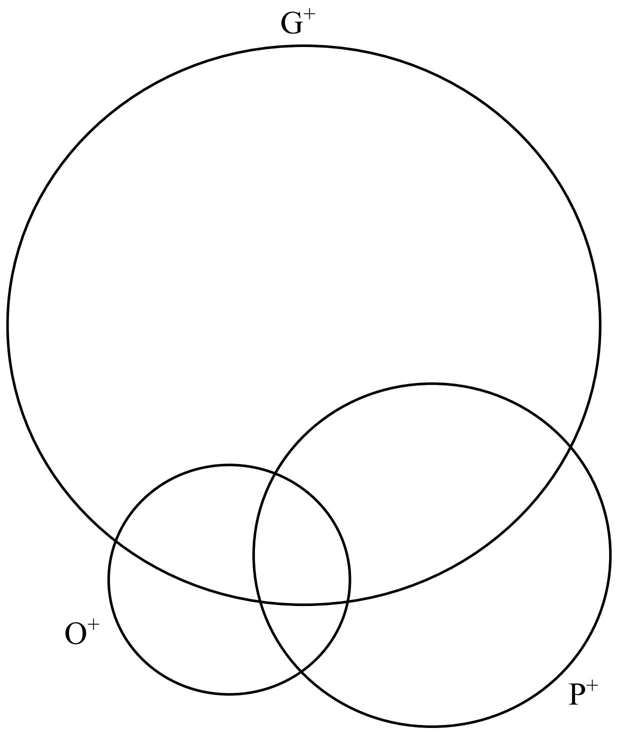
Hypothetically, let's say, Senator Obama observed the rise of progayism in America. So he partially endorses progayism by partially disapproving antigayistic legislation like DOMA.[329] Then, what ensues is that some, not all, pro-obama-ists also migrate into the ideological set of progayism. That ideological migration, that dynamics is what the Venn diagram above describes.

c. Recursive Analysis

How about Pope Francis? Hypothetically, what if, in year 2013, Pope Francis announced a blanket statement that His Excellency fully endorses President Obama's presidency? Then, the picture will look like this (please see the next page):

---

[329] See https://en.wikipedia.org/wiki/Defense_of_Marriage_Act .



Let's analyze the situation step-by-step. First thing that happened in our hypothetical scenario is that President Obama endorsed progayism. But not all proobamaists followed such ideological migration from antigayism to progayism. Some Obama supporters remained behind as antigayists. Next, Pope Francis endorsed President Obama. Some Catholics did not follow the ideological migration from anti-obama-ism to pro-obama-ism, but others did, and they became proobamaists. As they did so, some of them became progayists also, because by liking President Obama, they came to like progayism that President Obama really came to like. This way, the size of progayism has grown bigger and bigger and the ideology of progayism has managed to conquer about half of the known world.[330]

We illustrated the ideological propagation of progayism because it's a relatively recent historical development that we're all familiar with. But all other ideologies take the similar pattern of spreading.

---

[330] See https://en.wikipedia.org/wiki/LGBT_rights_by_country_or_territory .

d. Symbiosis between Two Ideologies

As we have observed, proobamaism benefitted by endorsing progayism in 2008 American presidential election, and progayism also benefitted from endorsing proobamaism. Now, such mutually beneficial relationship doesn't only occur between two ideologies, but also between an ideology and an individual.

When a person subscribes to an ideology, the ideology's set size increases by one, as its membership subscription just got incremented by one new member. This is the enforcement of an ideology's strength, when we see an ideology as a metaphysical force. But at the same time, the person also became more empowered now by being a part of something bigger than s/he was, by becoming a member of a big, international, mainstream and majoritarian ideology.

In sum, the enforcement of an ideology and the empowerment of an individual occur concurrently, when an individual joins an organization or an ideology.

V. A New Metaphysics

1. Seven-Tiered Hierarchy of the Universe

God

Angels

Ideologies

Humans

Animals

Plants

Objects

Thus is the seven-echelon hierarchy of the physico-metaphysical universe, ladies and gentlemen. The rationale behind such categorization is the control and consumption. At the bottom level, we have objects or chattels, i.e., something inanimate, like mass, energy, space, and time.[331] One level up, we have plants, who eat oxygen, carbon dioxide, water, sunlight, minerals, in order to photosynthesize. One level up, we have animals who eat the entities in lower levels, like plants and objects. The next level is us, *Homo sapiens*, who eat lower echelon entities like animals, plants, and objects.

---

[331] The author claims that he disproved both special and general relativity theories by Mr. Einstein in the previous two research papers. But he admits and appreciates Mr. Einstein's contribution in popularizing the interrelationship between the four enumerated concepts.

The next level is the world of ideologies. Then what does an ideology eat?

.

..

…

….

…..

That's right. It eats us. We, humans, are the food of ideologies. For instance, how many human beings die for a cause, for an activism, for an ideal, for a religion, for politics, etc.? Many.

The next question is, how many people live for an ideology?

.

..

…

….

…..

Well, that's all of us. We all live for something. Some people live for a corporation, some work for survival, some live for their families and friends, some live for the pursuit of happiness, pleasure, or truth, or whatever.

That something that people live for, that's what we call an ideology or ism. How about homeless people who never work? They live for anti-labor-ism and survivalism, as they want to survive without working. How about a farmer who work to produce apples? He can be said to be a pro-apple-ist. What about people who do not want to live? We can say they are anti-survival-ists. No matter what people live for or die for or work for or work against, people cannot be over and above an ideology. That's the way of things in the universe.

In the hierarchy above, the bottom three levels are physical entities. The top three levels, i.e., ideologies, angels, and God, are metaphysical beings. Humans are half physical, half metaphysical.

A newborn baby is purely like a plant, like an eating and sleeping biological machinery. As the baby grows up, and obtains knowledge, the baby becomes more like an animal with primitive language and experience and perception. As a child grows up to be an adult, s/he starts to become more metaphysical, like thinking about the meaning of life, the purpose of existence, the mechanism of the universe, etc.

As an adult gains moral conscience and ethical consciousness, if s/he ever does, then the adult becomes more and more like an ideology, an angel, or even a god.

2. Biology, Ideology, and Analogy

In biological ecosystem of animals, a bigger or stronger or more intelligent animal feed on smaller, or weaker, or less intelligent animals.

In human world, the picture is a mirror image of the animal world. We already noted that children are more like animals than adults are. So in a typical K-12 scene, a typical bully is someone of a bigger body size than the ones that s/he picks on.[332]

In adult world, well, the phenomenon isn't typically called bullyism, but the concept is the same: the strong feed on the weak. If you look at an organizational chart of any big private corporations or non-governmental organizations or governmental agencies, it always is in the shape of a triangle, or a pyramid.[333] One of Mr. Karl Marx's error was that he did not know that the triangular hierarchical system in society and economy is a natural phenomenon and such triangular form is the equilibrium point of things. That is why, any countries that underwent communist revolutions always have ended up in triangular hierarchical social system, unlike the flat, egalitarian system that Mr. Marx envisioned. Such system can only exist in one's imagination as it is an unnatural, unstable one.

---

[332] See https://en.wikipedia.org/wiki/Bullying .

[333] See https://en.wikipedia.org/wiki/Ecological_pyramid ; https://en.wikipedia.org/wiki/Organizational_chart ; https://www.investopedia.com/terms/o/organizational-chart.asp .

Well, that was a side. Now let's get back to the main entrée. Most people want to belong to a dominant, mainstream, majoritarian ideologies in order to avoid being picked on, being bullied upon, so to speak. *Homo sapiens* is a social species and people want to form a group and by nature, people feel secure and safe when they belong to a powerful ideological group.

We have seen in the news in the past decade or so that if someone says in public something negative about dominant ideologies like BLM-ism, LGBT-ism, Climate-Change-Alarm-ism, Covid-19-Alarm-ism, Sugar-Fat-ism, Tattoo-Pierce-ism, Marijuana-ism, then that person sometimes loses jobs, reputations, friends, and becomes a target of harsh comments in social medias.[334] So most people keep their silence even when they disagree with the mainstream ideologies.

In the adult human world, a person becomes a big person by subscribing to gigantic, majoritarian ideologies and another person becomes a small person by subscribing to a minority, unpopular ideologies. And like in the animal world or the children's playground, majoritarian adults pick on minoritarian adults, ideologically speaking. Thus is the ideological ecosystem.

3. Set Theoretical Definition of Ideology

Ideology can be defined as a set of rules. In year 2020, liberalism is a big superset of smaller ideologies, each of which is also a set of rules. For instance, pro-lgbt-ism is a subset of contemporary liberalism. What are some rules of pro-lgbt-ism?

Thou shall believe that a man can marry another man.

Thou shall believe that a one can choose and change one's own gender.

Again, without assigning a positive or a negative moral value to such rules, we can see an ideology is a set of rules that it requires a subscribing member to believe in and abide by.

This way, we can see that a religion or a polity nicely fits into our set-theoretical definition of ideology. And it does not stop there. A business, a science fits in our definition of ideology too. To be an employee of a company, you have to abide by the rules like, come to work, Mon – Fri, 8am – 5pm, etc. To be a physicist, you have to learn Newtonian physics, follow the formulas in calculus, and subscribe to Einsteinian Relativity-ism, etc.

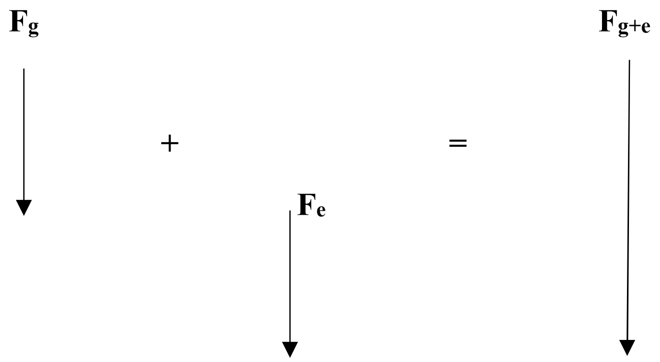
---

[334] See https://en.wikipedia.org/wiki/Internet_troll .

4. Vector Algebra Model of Ideological Force

A prominent African American feminist came up with a brilliant idea called intersectionality.[335] Basically, the theory goes, “if you are a woman and you are ethnic in America, then you get a racist discrimination and a sexist discrimination.” The theory adopted set theory concept of intersection.[336]

Here, we will adopt vector algebra[337] in our mathematical modeling[338] of ideological force. For instance, if an object has both mass and a net electrical charge, and if the object is in a gravitational force field and an electric field at the same time, then the gravitational force and the electric force adds up to give the doubled force to that object, like so:



Now, it is high time to make an application of the theory. In the mid-year of 2020, the democratic presidential candidate, Mr. Biden, was in the process of choosing his running mate, a vice presidential candidate. Without passing judgment, it is fair to say that the contemporary democratic party adopts the ideologies of pro-feminism and pro-ethnic-ism. So, Mr. Biden ended up selecting Ms. Kamala Harris as his running mate, as she is a female and an ethnic person. What we observe in this instance is the double ideological boost, in the fashion of inverse-intersectionality.

As a side, let us talk about the changing gender role of women in history. Way back in the days when people were hunters and gatherers, men went outside to hunt big game animals as men got muscles, and women stays home as they got kids. But industrial revolution changed such gender division of labor of domestic vs. out-of-house works. Men invented machines like laundry machines, washing machines, vacuum machines, sewing machines, and women's domestic chores has become easier, freeing time for women to do other things. Then, World War I and II took the men to wars overseas, and there were huge shortages in labor market, and companies started to hire women in their countries. These are the two factors that drove women from homes and houses to outside world of works and businesses.

---

[335] See https://en.wikipedia.org/wiki/Intersectionality .

[336] See https://en.wikipedia.org/wiki/Intersection_(set_theory) .

[337] See https://en.wikipedia.org/wiki/Euclidean_vector#Addition_and_subtraction .

[338] See https://en.wikipedia.org/wiki/Mathematical_model .

But we do acknowledge the roles that pro-feminists did indeed play to bring voting rights to women, etc. We do believe that pro-feminists made women more professional and beautiful, as women became more educated, and economically independent, and thus, more fashionable, stylish, sophisticated, and strong. //!-)

5. Action-Reaction[339] Analogy and Inertia[340] of Ideology

So the pro-feminist narrative goes, "we women have been victims of sexism and misogyny and gender discrimination for thousands of years. It is high time to act." The same line of self-victim-characterization-ism logic goes for pro-lgbt-ism, pro-ebony-ism, etc. Again, without assigning truth values to such contentions, we shall confine ourselves in this academic research paper, to a mathematical and physical analysis of such metaphysical, ideological phenomena.

It is true that lgbt community members have been victims of bullyism in schools and they have been largely shunned by mainstream back then, all the way until President George W. Bush's administration in America, including his predecessor, President Bill Clinton's administration.

That's the action part. The reaction part is the rise of pro-lgbt-ism, starting from President Barrack Obama's administration. Thus is the action-reaction, or oppression-rebellion theme, which is ubiquitous in human world history. Like, the proletariat communist revolution in Europe when employees have been earning small money, their labor exploited by employers, then rebelling against them, etc. Ideologies like communism, feminism, blm-ism, lgbt-ism, all follow the same pattern.

The pattern is this: the trajectory of an ideology. When there is an underrepresented, unpopular, political minority group,[341] having been suppressed and oppressed for a long time, then there comes this pro-weak-group-ism ideology that starts to rise up. Over time, such pro-political-minority-group start to grow in popularity based on sympathy and emotion of the people. So this upward-shifting ideology, as it gains more subscribers to the ideology, its size, i.e., its mass, i.e., its number of subscribers, start to increase, and so does its momentum. And later on, it becomes an unstoppable juggernaut with titanic, behemothan, leviathan[342] inertia and mass.

---

[339] See https://en.wikipedia.org/wiki/Newton%27s_laws_of_motion , the third law of motion.

[340] See https://en.wikipedia.org/wiki/Newton%27s_laws_of_motion , the first law of motion.

[341] See https://en.wikipedia.org/wiki/United_States_v._Carolene_Products_Co.#Footnote_Four .

[342] See https://www.gutenberg.org/files/3207/3207-h/3207-h.htm ; https://en.wikipedia.org/wiki/Leviathan_(Hobbes_book) .

When such pro-particular-group-ideology finally gains an equal status in society, it doesn't stop there, for it's too late to stop, as the ideology has become way too big with a huge inertial motion. It's still on the move, as nobody can stop such a huge mass, still keeps on moving in only one direction: bigger and better rights. So, such ideology ends up advocating for a superior right of the once-weak group of people and that group of once-politically-weak people become now-politically-powerful-group with superior rights to everyone else. Would it be fair to say, pro-semitism, pro-feminism, pro-gayism, pro-ebony-ism have become hyper-pro-semitism, hyper-pro-feminism, hyper-pro-gayism, hyper-pro-ebony-ism, pro-ultra-interracialism[343], pro-Einsteinian-relativism?

VI. Metaphysics and Physics in Humans

1. Intermezzo

We have worked for quite a bit, so let's take some balance between letters and science, work and play, and play. Ladies and gentlemen, let us watch a theatrical play of two characters: Senore Galileo Galilei and His Excelsis Pope of the Roman Catholic Church in the year 1633.[344] Please enjoy-

P: Order, Order!

G: Thank you for having me, Your Excellency.

P: Do you know why you're here, Mr. Senore Galilei?

G: Yes Sir, I believe I do.

P: Do you know what this is?

G: Yes, Sir.

---

[343] Ultrainterracialism's definition has been provided in previous papers referred to in this paper. Basically, ultrainterracialism refers to a behaviorism where an ethnic man engages in romantic relationship with a young, model-type, fertile, Caucasian female. On the other hand, antiultrainterracialism recommends such female to meet and mate an eligible man of the race equal to hers. The purpose of antiultrainterracialism is to preserve and protect Caucasian traits that everyone agrees to be aesthetically worthy of conservation, such as blonde or red hair, blue or green eyes, and pink or fair skin color. Those Caucasian traits are valuable assets to humanity and they are characteristics unique to Caucasian race. If this author, an Asian male, marries a young lady with blonde hair, white skin, and blue eyes, then the hypothetical children of his will have brown hair, brown eyes, and brown skin like their Asian father. Caucasian race in this sense is a very vulnerable subspecies of human race. That's the point of antiultrainterracialism. By the way, we all agree that all races are beautiful and wonderful, including Mixed Races, Blacks, Whites, Browns, Asians, Arabs, Jews, Indians, Natives, Hispanics.

[344] See https://en.wikipedia.org/wiki/Galileo_affair . See also, https://www.imdb.com/title/tt0734667/ ; https://en.wikipedia.org/wiki/The_Obsolete_Man ; https://twilightzone.fandom.com/wiki/The_Obsolete_Man .

P: Why don't you explain to me?

G: This is the Court of Inquisition and I was brought here for the charge of heresy.

P: And?

G: Unless I repent and stop saying that the earth moves around the sun, then I will be sentenced with death penalty, Sir.

P: Correct. Glad you're a sane man. I was wondering. You're kinda krazy, though. Doncha think?

G: Excuse me, Sir?

P: I mean, come on. You think you're better than anyone else on earth?

G: No Sir.

P: How can you possibly say, the earth moves around the sun[345] when everyone else says the sun moves around the earth[346]?

G: Your Highness, it's not that I think I'm smarter than anyone else on earth, but that I happen to have a better telescope than others.[347]

P: Oh Mr. Senore Galilei. You're seeing things. You're singing a song that doesn't exist.

G: Sir, I don't know how to sing. I'm a scientist.

P: Ohh…..a scientist you say you are. What else art thou?

G: I am a Catholic, Sir.

P: Hmm. What else?

G: I am a philosopher, Your Worshipfulness.

P: Would you care to know what I think you are, Senore Galilei?

G: Yes Sir, I would be very interested.

P: You are an error, Mr. Galilei. That's what you are.

G: …

P: An aberration, a teenage mutant ninja turtle, a vermin, a poison, a cancer, a virus, a deviation, an abnormality. You think you're better than anyone else. I think the opposite. I think you're the one person on earth who is erring. You're a red herring, Mr. Galilei. You're showoff. You got some showmanship, huh? You're a prima donna? Well, only in this Court, you occupy the limelight, the spotlight and highlight. After we sentence you to death, no one, I mean zero people, will remember you ever existed.

---

[345] See https://en.wikipedia.org/wiki/Heliocentrism .

[346] See https://en.wikipedia.org/wiki/Geocentric_model .

[347] See https://en.wikipedia.org/wiki/Galileo_Galilei#Controversy_over_heliocentrism .

G: I'm okay with that, Your Majesty.

P: You are okay with the death penalty?

G: Oh no. I mean I'm okay with no one remembering me.

P: …whatever.

G: It's just that I don't think I did anything wrong to deserve a death penalty.

P: The thing is, you're an offense. You are offensive. You offended us. We think you're a stupendously arrogant man. An ignorant man too. So, we eliminate you.

G: I may be ignorant. But why do you think I'm arrogant?

P: It's because you think that you're right and that you're the only one who is right and that everyone else is wrong. You think you're smarter than us, better than us. And we got offended by your attitude. So we're here to fix you up. Or else, death.

G: I deny the charge, Your Honor. I never once believed I'm better or I know better than others.

P: Look, science man. For thousands of years, in every country on earth, billions of people have always believed that the sun, the moon and the stars, revolve around the earth. And now you, somehow brazenly declare, the earth revolves around the sun, the earth spins itself? I call that delusion.

G: Oh well, Your Highness.

P: Even your colleagues in science community say you're wrong. In fact, all the scientists say that you're wrong.

G: I have a predecessor, Sir.

P: Oh, you mean Senore Copernicus?

G: Yes Sir.

P: We put him in jail. We burnt his books. He's history. We, we make the history, cuz we're in control, we're in power. And we're proud of that. Unless you repent, thou shalt share the same fate as thy predecessor, or even worse. You're a poison, a disease. We will isolate you so that your metaphysical pathogen doesn't survive and thrive. We may as well extirpate ya, terminate ya, extinguishing your idea, yeah.

G: May I ask you a question to the Honorable One?

P: Go ahead. Say a prayer, scream a dying man's cry, a dead man walking, speak in tongue, get lost in trance, or a dying man's wish.

G: What do you think about Jesus?

P: Hey man, I'm the Pope. I represent Jesus Christ. I'm like, I'm his ahh…. his agent on earth. You wanna talke to Mr. Jesus, you come to me. Then I'll convey the message to him if it's worth it.

G: 16 centuries ago, Mr. Christ was in this very Court. And why?

P: Well. Mr. Jesus died an innocent death in order to save the humanity. You say you're a physicist. So let me talk in your language. Mr. Jesus was in heaven as the Son of God. He was very high up there, with infinite potential energy. When he came down to the planet earth, all his infinite potential energy from the Highest, got converted into the infinite amount of kinetic energy. We call it, the salvation energy. That's why his sacrifice, the crucifixion, can save anyone ad infinitum, to the infinity. Capisce?

G: Oh, of course, the Most Majestic One.

P: The problem is, you are thinking that you're even smarter than Mr. Jesus Christ, the Son of God.

G: That is not true, the Most Honorable One.

P: Mr. Jesus Christ thought that the sun moves around the earth.

G: Well, perhaps he did indeed.

P: Mr. Gautama Siddhartha, also known as Mr. Buddha, thought that the sun revolves around the earth.

G: Uhh….maybe so.

P: Socrates, Confucius, Lao Zu[348], Aristotle, Plato, all the saints in the world thought that the sun moves around the earth.

G: I guess you're right, the Highest One.

P: So you're saying, they're all wrong and you're the only one right? You're saying, you're smarter than all those saints in the world?

G: …

P: Are you saying the Bible is wrong?

G: …

P: Bible says, God says, the sun rises from the east, and the sun sets to the west. You're suggesting God is wrong? Bible is wrong? You're saying, you know better than God?

G: …

P: You are a blasphemy case, a sacrilege charge we impose upon you. So yeah. A death penalty case this is. Now you know what you have done. Wrong thinking. Wrong thoughts. And you write it all down so people can get infected with your metaphysical viruses. A spawning poisonous mushroom. A corrupter of the youth. This is why you must die.

---

[348] See https://en.wikipedia.org/wiki/Laozi .

G: But didn't they say the same about Mr. Christ like 1600 years ago in this very Court, Your Excellency?

P: No. This is Rome. Mr. Jesus died in Israel. Big difference.

G: But I don't want to die.

P: You don't have to. You can repent and recant. But we may have to confine you nonetheless, so your ideas die out with ya. You will be forbidden from writing. You will talk to no one. You will be alone and you will die alone. Sounds like a deal?

G: Sounds like an ordeal, Sir.

P: Stop trying to rhyme with me, old man. You're not gonna get your sentence commuted, you hear me?

G: Loud and clear, Your Loudest.

P: Ok then. Wha wha wah wah wait a minute. What did you just call Me?

G: Whoops, I meant to say, Your Highest-ness.

P: Oh. Fine. So. As we're sitting here today, do you repent, Senore Galileo Galilei?

G: I surely do, Your Excellentness.

P: Do you admit that you were arrogant beyond measure?

G: Roger, Sir.

P: Do you acknowledge that you erred, Mr. Galilei?

G: Si, Signore.

P: Do you know by now, that the sun moves around the earth?

G: Yes, Sir.

P: Did you learn a life lesson and became a better person?

G: Absolutely, Your Most Worthiness.

P: Do you promise me and the world that you shall stop lying and start telling the truth and be a humble man from now on?

G: I promise, Your Most Highest Priesthoodness.

P: Good. Now get out of my sight.

G: One thing, Sir.

P: Make it quick, Signore Galilei. What?

G: What do you think about Mr. Albert Einstein?

P: …. Who?

G: Mr. Albert Einstein of special and general relativism.

P: …How do you know about him?

G: I heard the rumor that you went time travel to the future, to the year 1985.[349]

P: …well that's… that was a long time ago, man, and it's secret.

G: So the story goes, they came to you one day and invited you to come to 1985, you studied modern English, and went to a library, and you read books about Mr. Einstein. Is that correct, Your Majestic One?

P: Yes.

G: So what do you think about Mr. Einstein?

P: I think he is the truest, the greatest scientist of all. He proved you wrong, Mr. Galilei. I'm glad he proved you wrong. Somehow, yes, you managed to be recorded in human history. Congratulations.

G: Thank you, Your Excellenceness.

P: Now, how do you know about Mr. Einstein?

G: Oh I did the time travel myself.[350]

P: What year did you go to?

G: I went to year 2020.

P: Oh?

G: Oh yeah.

P: What did you do there and then?

G: Like you did, I went to a library, and used what they call, a computer, and the Internet.

P: So?

G: And I downloaded two academic research papers. One is called, *Inertial Symmetry Axiom Theory*,[351] and the other is titled, *Force Echelon Axiom Theory.*[352]

---

[349] See https://en.wikipedia.org/wiki/Back_to_the_Future .

[350] See https://en.wikipedia.org/wiki/Bill_&_Ted's_Excellent_Adventure .

[351] See https://vixra.org/abs/2009.0211 .

[352] See https://vixra.org/abs/2010.0192

P: What's that?

G: There once was, I mean, there will be, this obscure man in Alaska, and he claimed that he disproved Mr. Einstein's special and general relativism.

P: Nonsense. He's as much in error as you were. He's as arrogant as you once used to be. He's just like you an hour ago, for you're a new, humbled man now.

G: That nameless man kinda vindicated me and I like what he wrote in his two papers.

P: Well, I don't. From what I hear from you about him, he's just like you an hour ago. He thinks what, all the millions of scientists with Ph.D. degrees all around the world have been wrong for one hundred years, and he's the only one who's right. He claims he's smarter than all those other scientists. Delusion. A nutcase. A mental case. I think he should be subject to a psychiatric evaluation. That's like, 21st century version of this Inquisition Court. So yeah. He will be corrected. I'd bet on it.

G: Well. Fortunately he's in a country called America. So I think he'll be just fine.

P: America?

G: Yes, Your Majesticness, he's in Alaska, America.

P: Oh well. Hopefully that arrogant man finds a way to repentance and salvation and learn some humility and humanity.

G: I'm sure he will, Your Highfulness.

P: Alright, I'm out.

G: Good bye, Your Amazing Gracefulness.

//xD

2. Inertia of Ideology

Let's say an ideology has 'n' number of subscribers and each of them has spent 't' amount of time in the past having been subscribed to the ideology. Then the mass, or inertia, of the ideology can be defined as follows:

$$m = \sum_{k=1}^{n} t_k$$

Now, let's assume 'T' is the average time of past subscription duration, averaged over all members of the ideology. Then,

$$T = (\sum_{k=1}^{n} t_k) / n = m / n$$

Therefore, it follows:

$$m = n\, T$$

Roughly speaking, an ideology's inertia is proportional to its time in existence and also to the number of its members. By the way, what we have above is a metaphysical equation.

3. Illustration by Examples of Ideologies

During the post-covid-blm-ism,[353] there supposedly existed what's dubbed as a 'national racial reckoning.' And a historic fact has been brought to some people: the fact that many of America's founding fathers were slave owners.[354] Many Americans in the year 2020 may have asked the following question to themselves:

"How was it possible that so many people could have been so wrong for such a long period of time? Even the most well educated and most virtuous of all Americans, the Founding Fathers, subscribed to pro-slavery-ism. Pro-slavery-Ism existed for three hundred years in America.[355] It existed even longer in Europe.[356] How could our ancestors have been so dumb and unwise and even, evil?"

---

[353] See https://en.wikipedia.org/wiki/Black_Lives_Matter .

[354] See https://www.britannica.com/topic/The-Founding-Fathers-and-Slavery-1269536 ; https://www.revolutionary-war.net/slavery-and-the-founding-fathers/ ; https://www.smithsonianmag.com/history/founding-fathers-and-slaveholders-72262393/ .

[355] See https://en.wikipedia.org/wiki/Slavery_in_the_United_States .

[356] See https://en.wikipedia.org/wiki/Slavery_in_medieval_Europe .

The truth is, a domination of a wrongful ideology over a country for centuries or for decades is not uncommon in human history. Actually, in any given era in history, you can find at least one bad ideology in dominance over a big region of the world. The hegemony of bad ideologies over big number of peoples is more like a norm, not an exception, in history.

Then how can we tell a good ideology from a bad ideology? How can we define what's absolutely good and bad? Isn't the definition of goodness relativistic or subjective, as opposed to absolutivistic and objective?

4. Mathematical Definition of Objectivity

The idea presented here was first introduced in the author's paper written five years ago, back in 2015.[357] We will revisit the concept here.

Let's talk about subjectivity first. Say, there is an ideology, like pro-lgbt-ism or blm-ism or anti-semitism or pro-nazism. A person x has a subjective opinion about that ideology y. From -10 being the worst and +10 being the best, the person assigns a score to the ideology and we'll call it a score function, score(x, y).

$$-10 \leq score(x, y) \leq +10$$

Let's say, we average up such score function over space and time. We will ask the question to everyone who ever existed in the past, who is existing in the present, and who will ever exist in the future, "what do you think about this ideology y?"

This way, objectivity can be defined as the average of subjectivities:

$$Value(y) = \left(\sum_{k=1}^{n} score(x_k , y) \right) / n$$

For instance, pro-nazism was the mainstream ideology in 1930s in Germany,[358] like pro-slavery-ism was the majoritarian ideology in 1700s in America.[359] Depending on time and space, or era and locale, the popularity of an ideology changes in time. The kind of objectivity we defined above can be named as a universal objectivity, as opposed to objectivity of a given era and a given locale.

---

[357] See https://works.bepress.com/huhnkie_lee/3/ .

[358] See https://en.wikipedia.org/wiki/Nazism .

[359] See https://www.nationalgeographic.org/interactive/slavery-united-states/ .

Today in America in the year 2020, we have dominant ideologies like blm-ism, lgbt-ism, tattoo-pierce-ism, hyper-pro-sugar-fat-ism, pro-marijuana-ism, climate-change-alarmism, hyper-covid-19-alarmism, etc. Some other countries in this year 2020 may regard some of those contemporary American mainstream ideologies as undesirable. Even in America in 200 years from now, in the year 2220, our descendants may read about us in history books and may make the same judgment upon us, just like we pass judgment now on our American ancestors who lived in America in 1700s and subscribed to pro-slavery-ism.

So. Can this, universal objectivity as we defined above, be, the truth, in its absolutest sense? It could be. We'll leave that judgment to the future generation. //!-)

5. Four-tiered Hierarchy of Metaphysical Universe

Formerly, we have formulated 7-tiered system and now, we will consider the top 4 echelons, like so:

God

Angels

Ideologies

Humans

Now, we all agree that we do not know too much about God and angels. So, we modify the above model into the following:

4 *People*

3 *Media*

2 *Ideologies*

1 *Humans*

Of course, humans are people, so the hierarchy above is a circular one,[360] as opposed to a linear hierarchy.[361]

So, what's the motivation behind equalizing God with people? Well, it's like this. In religion, working for God is more or less working for the common good of and benefit for the people as a whole. For instance, Mr. Jesus, who is deemed equal to God in Holy Trinity doctrine of Christianity,[362] once said, "what you gave to the least of all, is what you gave to Me."[363]

How about angels equaling media? Well, it's like this. Well, let's first define what media is.[364] Media can be defined as a set of entities who get to decide what ideology takes the front stage in the theatrical arena that we call history, where the audience is the humanity.

Let us enumerate the members of media set: journalists of news in TV, internet or radio; talk show hosts in TV, radio, internet; editors and writers of newspaper, magazines; publishers of books; editors of academic journals, etc.

Now, if we think back in the 7-tiered hierarchy, humans occupy the 4th echelon and control lower echelon entities like object, plants, and animals. A farmer control water, crops, and herds in the farmland. The farmer also conducts selective breeding, also known as artificial selection.[365]

Media picks and chooses what ideology gets to see the light of the day. This is analogous to artificial selection. Like a farmer, media 'grows' and nourishes a set of ideologies in order to make them grow, survive, and thrive. In the year 2020 in America, we have conservative media like OAN, Newsmax, Fox, and AM[366] radio talk shows; while we also have liberalist media such as CNN, MSNBC, ABC, FM[367] radio news like NPR.

So. Long story short, media has the control over what ideology gets to see the light of the day, by selecting an ideology and report it in a medium so that everyone on the face of the earth sees that ideology on the spotlight, on the center stage. It's analogous to a farmer selecting a pair of animals so that their desirable genes get to survive to the next generation of farmed animals. Media is the farmer of ideologies.

---

[360] See https://en.wikipedia.org/wiki/Riemannian_geometry ; https://en.wikipedia.org/wiki/Geodesic ; https://en.wikipedia.org/wiki/Riemannian_manifold .

[361] See https://en.wikipedia.org/wiki/Euclidean_geometry ; https://mathworld.wolfram.com/EuclideanMetric.html ; https://en.wikipedia.org/wiki/Euclidean_distance .

[362] See https://www.britannica.com/topic/Trinity-Christianity ; https://en.wikipedia.org/wiki/Trinity .

[363] See https://biblehub.com/matthew/25-40.htm .

[364] See https://en.wikipedia.org/wiki/Media_(communication) .

[365] See https://biologydictionary.net/artificial-selection/ ; https://en.wikipedia.org/wiki/Selective_breeding .

[366] See https://en.wikipedia.org/wiki/AM_broadcasting . AM radio wave travels far, so AM talks show tend to be conservative, as rural listeners tend to be conservative.

[367] See https://en.wikipedia.org/wiki/FM_broadcasting . FM radio wave travels short, so FM listeners tends to be urban liberalists.

Next level is the people. People decide what ideology is popular in any given time and space. Media obeys people's demand, as media makes money if a lot of people watch the media's report.

But, since the hierarchy is circular, people are also controlled by ideologies, which is controlled by media, which is controlled by people. The people in the 4th echelon, they're like God, because they create lower echelon entities like media and ideologies, and even the people.

VII. Ideological Subscription Equation

1. Score Function Refined, Redefined

Previously, we briefly defined a score function with which a person evaluates an ideology. Also previously, we said that humans are half physical and half metaphysical. Here, we shall combine such two concepts to composite a new metaphysical function, like so:

$$score(x, y) = physicality(x) * benefit(x, y) + metaphysicality(x) * virtue(x, y)$$

Like before, x is a person and y is an ideology. So, we said a person has animalistic parts and divine parts. But it's not like, 50/50 split, of course, but more like 20/80 for some, 70/30 for others. It's a sliding scale, depending on individuals.[368]

If a person is more like an animal than like a god, then the person cares more about the benefit part of the ideology. Subscription to a mainstream ideology will make s/him fit it to the crowd and make s/him more popular among peers than otherwise. By benefit from subscription to a majoritarian ideology, we are referring to materialistic boons such as money, power, fame, popularity, job security, good reputation, etc.

Now, if a person is more metaphysical than physical, this person would evaluate the ideology at hand by its virtues, such as its veracity, truthfulness, justice, righteousness, its moral content, ethical quality, etc. Refusal to subscribe to an unsound majoritarian ideology may make s/him unpopular in s/his time, but if s/he is more divine a person than bestial, then the person will reject that ideology.

---

[368] See https://datascience.stackexchange.com/questions/19378/how-the-vector-of-weights-assigned-to-a-neural-network ; https://en.wikipedia.org/wiki/Synaptic_weight .

2. Subscription Equation

Subscription equation is a metaphysical equation which is tripartite in form. Well, in English, it's an equation whose output consists of three possibilities: yes, no, neither. Let's just write it out and then we'll look at it, and think about it.

$$
\begin{aligned}
subscription(x, y) = {} & (\ score(x, y) \le 0 \ \ \&\ score(x, -y) \le 0 \ ) * 0 \ + \\
& (\ score(x, y) > 0 \ \ \&\ score(x, y) \ge score(x, -y)\ ) * y \ + \\
& (\ score(x, -y) > 0 \ \ \&\ score(x, y) \le score(x, -y)\ ) * -y
\end{aligned}
$$

…….

……

…..

….

…

..

.

a. Some Preliminaries in Boolean Algebra

The equation aforementioned is rather involved. We gotta cover some serious basics //xD

So. First. We need learn some Boolean algebra. Boolean algebra deals with true/false, or 0/1.[369] Let's say,

$$x = 10, y = 9$$

Then, we define a Boolean function:

$$b(x, y) = (x > y) = (10 > 9) = true = 1$$

But if,

$$x = 2, y = 9$$

Then,

$$b(x, y) = (x > y) = (2 > 9) = false = 0$$

Now, we can hybridize Boolean terms and regular algebraic operations. Let's define a Boolean hybrid function:[370]

$$h(x, y) = x(x < y) + y(x > y) + 5$$

If x=3, y=10, then,

---

[369] See https://en.wikipedia.org/wiki/Boolean_algebra .

[370] See https://en.wikipedia.org/wiki/Iverson_bracket ; https://en.wikipedia.org/wiki/Kronecker_delta .

$$\begin{aligned} h(3, 10) &= 3(3 < 10) + 10(3 > 10) + 5 \\ &= 3 * 1 \quad + 10 * 0 \quad + 5 \\ &= 3 \quad + 0 \quad + 5 \\ &= 8 \end{aligned}$$

So that's basically it. Not too bad, right? //:-)

b. Some Preliminaries in Set Theory

In set theory, two sets A and B are said to be mutually exclusive, or disjoint[371], if:

$$A \cap B = \emptyset$$

In other words, if set A and set B have no common members, then the two sets are mutually exclusive[372], or disjoint.

Now, let's say, set A and set B and set C are subsets of the universal set U. Set A and set B and set C are said to be complete subsets of U, if:

$$A \cup B \cup C = U$$

Now, let's combine the two concepts of disjointedness and completeness. If set A, B, C are both disjointed from each other and also complete toward U, then set A, B, C are called the partitions[373] of U.

In computer programming, the logical partitionality is a very important concept in order to avoid errors.[374] Let's write a pseudocode[375] like so:

---

[371] See https://en.wikipedia.org/wiki/Disjoint_sets .

[372] See https://en.wikipedia.org/wiki/Mutual_exclusivity .

[373] See https://en.wikipedia.org/wiki/Partition_of_a_set .

[374] See https://en.wikipedia.org/wiki/Conditional_(computer_programming)#Else_if .

[375] See https://en.wikipedia.org/wiki/Pseudocode .

```
Begin
     If       (x < 0) then output “negative”;
     Else if  (x = 0) then output “zero”    ;
     Else if  (x > 0) then output “positive”;
End
```

Above, the three conditions, namely, $(x < 0)$ and $(x = 0)$ and $(x > 0)$ are the three partitions of the set U, which is the set of real numbers[376] in this example.

c. De Morgan’s Law[377]

We will keep this subsection very brief by making one illustrative example:

$$\neg(\, score(x, y) \le 0 \;\&\; score(x, -y) \le 0 \,)$$

$$= score(x, y) > 0 \;||\; score(x, -y) > 0$$

Above, ¬ means logical negation, & is the logical AND operator, and || means logical OR operator.[378]

d. Back to Subscription Equation’s Description

Last time, we had:

$$\begin{aligned} subscription(x, y) = {} & (\, score(x, y) \le 0 \;\&\; score(x, -y) \le 0 \,) * 0 \;+ \\ & (\, score(x, y) > 0 \;\&\; score(x, y) \ge score(x, -y) \,) * y \;+ \\ & (\, score(x, -y) > 0 \;\&\; score(x, y) \le score(x, -y) \,) * -y \end{aligned}$$

---

[376] See https://en.wikipedia.org/wiki/Real_number .

[377] See https://en.wikipedia.org/wiki/De_Morgan%27s_laws .

[378] See https://en.wikipedia.org/wiki/Logical_connective .

There is some error in the equation above and we shall fix it. The erratum is that the set of conditionals above is not water-tight partitions. So let us revise the above as follows:

$$subscription(x, y) = (score(x, y) \leq 0 \;\; \& \; score(x, -y) \leq 0) * 0 \quad + \\ (score(x, y) > 0 \;\; || \; score(x, -y) > 0) * (score(x, y) * y + score(x, -y) * -y)$$

The equation is kinda bulky because we are using words, not letters for the function names. Let's use subscript/superscript conventions[379] and use 'S' for subscription function, and 'C' for score function. Then the equation above becomes:

$$S_x^y = (C_x^y \leq 0 \;\; \& \; C_x^{-y} \leq 0) * 0 + (C_x^y > 0 \; || \; C_x^{-y} > 0) * (C_x^y * y + C_x^{-y} * -y)$$

e. Subscription Equation's Illustration

So, the metaphysical equation above looks like some kind of silkworm squiggling on mulberry leaves.[380] We admit, it's not the prettiest equations we've discovered so far, but it works nicely, as we shall illustrate with examples. We will make many examples.

Let's write it again so we don't have to flip pages back and forth:

$$S_x^y = (C_x^y \leq 0 \;\; \& \; C_x^{-y} \leq 0) * 0 + (C_x^y > 0 \; || \; C_x^{-y} > 0) * (C_x^y * y + C_x^{-y} * -y)$$

Let's also bring back the ideological score function in succinct notational convention:

$$C_x^y = P_x * B_x^y + M_x * V_x^y$$

First case is where the person x does not care about ideology y or its anti-ideology -y. For instance, x does not want to think about progayism or antigayism, as he is not interested in activism or politics, as he abhors such subject matter. He's rather go fishing on a boat instead of thinking any kind of politics which gives him a headache. So both progayism and antigayism get negative scores from one person Mr. x. So x ends up subscribing to neither ideology and the equation above results in 0, which means neutral position or non-subscription.

---

[379] See https://en.wikipedia.org/wiki/Tensor .

[380] See https://en.wikipedia.org/wiki/Bombyx_mori ; https://en.wikipedia.org/wiki/Morus_alba .

Next, let's x is a person who is 50% physical and 50% metaphysical. x sees +10 benefit in progayism as it's a popular ideology of the day but x sees 0 virtue in progayism. So x evaluates progayism as a score of +5:

$$C_x^y = P_x * B_x^y + M_x * V_x^y$$

$$= 0.5 * +10 + 0.5 * 0$$

$$= +5 + 0$$

$$= +5$$

On the other hand, x sees antigayism's virtue as +8 and its benefit as -2, as it's an unpopular ideology to adopt. Then, the score of antigayism in x's eyes is:

$$C_x^{-y} = P_x * B_x^{-y} + M_x * V_x^{-y}$$

$$= 0.5 * -2 + 0.5 * +8$$

$$= -1 + 4 = +3$$

Now we can calculate the subscription as follows:

$$S_x^y = (C_x^y \leq 0 \ \& \ C_x^{-y} \leq 0) * 0 + (C_x^y > 0 \ || \ C_x^{-y} > 0) * (C_x^y * y + C_x^{-y} * -y)$$

$$= (5 \leq 0 \ \& \ 3 \leq 0) * 0 + (5 > 0 \ || \ 3 > 0) * (5 * y + 3 * -y)$$

$$= 0 * 0 + (1 \ || \ 1) * 2y$$

$$= 0 + 1 * 2y$$

$$= 2y$$

So, x ends up subscribing to progayism, at the level of +2, in the scale between 0 to +20. Quite a passive ideological subscription, it seems.

What we have found in the above example is that, in the subscription equation, we don't quite need the first term multiplied by zero, because it will always be zero. Then, our newest and brightest subscription equation will be, simply:

$$S_x^y = (C_x^y > 0 \mid\mid C_x^{-y} > 0) * (C_x^y * y + C_x^{-y} * -y)$$

Ladies and gentlemen, we are witnessing the evolution of a scientific theory, if not witnessing the history in the making //xD

Let's make one more last illustrative example and we shall call it a chapter. Let's say, x is 70% metaphysical man and 30% physical person. x evaluates progayism as -3, and antigayism as +9. Then, x's subscription value becomes:

$$\begin{aligned} S_x^y &= (C_x^y > 0 \mid\mid C_x^{-y} > 0) * (C_x^y * y + C_x^{-y} * -y) \\ &= (-3 \;\; > 0 \mid\mid 9 \;\;\; > 0) * (-3 * y \;\; + \;\; 9 \;\; * -y) \\ &= (\quad 0 \quad \mid\mid \quad\; 1 \quad) * -12y \\ &= \qquad\quad 1 \qquad\qquad * -12y \\ &= -12y \end{aligned}$$

As we can see, since score function ranges from -10 to +10, subscription function's range becomes:

$$-20 \leq \; S_x^y \; \leq 20$$

Not a problem. So in this instance, the one Mr. x is a rather strongly antigayist, more so than an average antigayist. Mr. x may become an activist for antigayism, like wearing t-shirt that says "Moral Antigayism" or putting a custom-designed license plate that says the same slogan.[381]

---

[381] See https://www.michigandaily.com/opinion/11letter-editor-anti-gay-message19 ; https://www.michigandaily.com/opinion/11viewpoint-victors-whom19 . The article is about this very author who used to be an antigayism activist in the University of Michigan campus. The author's point was that gayism is a harmful ideology to subscribe to. The author hates or judges no person but he does evaluate a certain set of ideologies as unsound, like everyone else does.

3. The Final Narrative

Alright, kind and generous ladies and gentlemen. We've come a long way.[382]

Let us call this a paper with the final act, the fanfare finale of a theatrical play. Ladies and gentlemen, we introduce you, the man who needs no introduction, Mr. Socrates-

S: …

A: Mr. Socrates- A bigly welcome to the discussion, Mister. What a great honor.

S: …where am I who the he** are you?

A: Oh, I'm no one. It's not that important who I am. So where have you been all these years, Mr. Socrates?

S: I was taking a nap in heavenly peace like baby Jesus in Pantheonic Paradise until… You kidnapped me. This is an abduction case. Police! Guards?

A: We invited you here. You ain't an uninvited guest. I told you, you're welcome here.

S: Well, you never invited me and if you had, I refuse. I'm too important a person to spend my awesome time with a very insignificant man like you. I don't like you. Oh you, Asian man.

A: Mr. Socrates. There is no need to call me an Asian man.

S: You got a name?

A: No need to know my name either.

S: Then what you want me to call you?

A: Don't call me anything. Just talk to me. What's in your mind, Mister?

S: I am "the", Mister, Socrates. You don't get to ask me questions. I ask you questions.[383]

A: Sounds great, Sir. Ask me a question.

S: What do you think about BLM?

A: ….you mean Black Lives Matter?

S: Yes.

A: Yes.

---

[382] See https://www.metrolyrics.com/praise-you-lyrics-fatboy-slim.html .

[383] See https://en.wikipedia.org/wiki/Socratic_method .

S: You agree then?

A: Of course. As an American man, of course we love African Americans.

S: Oh you, Asian man.

A: Mister Socrates. I object you calling me that.

S: You don't like your Asian-ness?

A: I do. But there's more to me though. Me being an Asian is one tiny little piece of me. I'm more than that, I'm more than my skin color, I'm a lot more than my race.

S: What else art thou?

A: I'm a scientist, a mathematician, a gentleman and a scholar, and and and…

S: Young man, know thyself.

A: Are you saying I don't?

S: What I'm saying is, what you think you are may be vastly different from what you actually are.

A: Oh. Ok. I like science. Maybe I'm a student of science then.

S: That's better.

A: May I talk some more about BLM please?

S: Go right ahead, Asian man.

A: …whatever. So BLM[384] started as a venerable cause, with good intention.

S: Then?

A: Then Covid-19[385] happened and everything changed.

S: Oh?

A: BLM changed its characteristic completely after Covid-19.

S: How?

A: Simply put, it's a cabin fever case.

S: What?!

A: Politicians typically are illiterate in science. Even the white house doctors with fancy MD/PhD degrees don't know how to apply what they learnt in school in real life situation.

---

[384] See https://en.wikipedia.org/wiki/Black_Lives_Matter .

[385] See https://en.wikipedia.org/wiki/Coronavirus_disease_2019 .

S: Are you saying Covid-19 is a case of germaphobia?

A: Bingo. A pandemic of germaphobia.

S: You must be a Republican.

A: Kinda.

S: …

A: So post-Covid-BLM is vastly different from pre-Covid-BLM.

S: How so?

A: Mr. Francis Bacon[386] once said,

S: Knowledge is Power?

A: Yes. And its corollary is?

S: Lack of knowledge is fear?

A: Right. Ignorance induces powerlessness. They were just afraid.

S: What happened next?

A: The fearful politicians locked everything down. Shut down the business, lock people up in their homes.

S: And?

A: *Home sapiens* is a social species. Socialness is in people genes, it's in their blood.

S: Wow.

A: So when people can't go to bars and clubs, restaurants, football stadiums, birthday parties, people get bored and lonely at homes.

S: And?

A: Then an incident happened.

S: Are you referring to the passing of Mr. George Floyd?[387]

A: Yes.

S: What do you think of him?

A: Oh, he's a very handsome gentleman. He's a great role model too, to the extent that he was in his late forties and he was in fantastic shape, like a big muscle builder. That's fantastic.

---

[386] See https://en.wikipedia.org/wiki/Francis_Bacon .

[387] See https://en.wikipedia.org/wiki/George_Floyd .

S: And?

A: So people finally found their savior in Mr. Floyd, just like some people found their savior in Mr. Jesus.

S: Oh man. You don't know what you're talking about. Know thyself!

A: I know. What I'm saying is, people finally found a pretext to get outside their homes legally. Like, how about the 1st Amendment?

S: Freedom of speech?

A: Freedom of religion, freedom of assembly, yes and yes and yes.

S: Demonstration? Protest?

A: Yeah. That's the only legal way people can get outside, get together. One way or another, people will find a way to get out there and get together. Government can't stop what's in people's genes, the desire to be social, to be together.

S: Nonsense! Know yourself! Know your ignorance. Please!

A: Oh well.

S: Oh you, Asiatic man. You're wasting time.

A: Oh?

S: You write this paper, right? It won't be read. It'll be buried rather. Six feet under. Hmm?

A: I'm okay with that. Fine by me.

S: Then what's the point of writing it? What's the meaning of all this?

A: Monsieur Jean Jacque Rousseau[388] said?

S: Return to the Nature?

A: Yes. Yes!

S: What about it?

A: What we need is, we need to learn what ideologies are, and how it's eating us, the people.

S: ?!

A: We the People should stop being sacrificed on the altar of ideologies.

S: I don't understand.

A: Why are all these people go out there and get hurt, even die, all in the name of some isms?

---

[388] See https://en.wikipedia.org/wiki/Jean-Jacques_Rousseau .

S: Cuz they care?

A: I care too. But I care more about the people, and I can't care less about ideological differences between you and me, Mr. Socrates.

S: Sock it!

A: You mean I should stuff a sock into my mouth and stop talking?

S: Bingo!

A: Well, I'd rather not.

S: Then go on. See? I'm a Saint. I have saintly patience, you see?

A: Thank you. So yeah. That's the main point of this paper. Know what ideologies are, overcome it, and don't get consumed by it.

S: What about BLM?

A: The ideology of BLM has some merits. I concede. BLM asked a very important question.

S: How to arrest a criminally accused individual without causing injury or death?

A: Correct.

S: Do you have a solution?

A: Yes.

S: Would you care to share it with us?

A: Of course. That's why I invited you here, Mr. Socrates.

S: Tell us.

A: I mean, Tesla company[389] says they got the technology to colonize planet Mars.

S: And?

A: If they got such a wonderful technology, I'd recommend them to research and develop electric bullets. A wireless projectile, a non-lethal bullet that police officers can use to shock an individual resisting arrest effort. I think it's a better investment than sending rockets to Mars to colonize it or to search for alien species. Don't you think?

S: No. Not.

A: Why?

S: Well. Maybe.

---

[389] See https://en.wikipedia.org/wiki/Tesla,_Inc. .

A: Mr. Socrates.[390] You just wanna be contrary. How old are you?

S: Well, I was like, 71 years old when I left the planet earth, and wow, it's been like…long years. Let's say I left the planet earth to go to heaven, like, about 400 years before your beloved Savior was born.

A: You mean Mr. Jesus?

S: Don't interrupt when I'm doing math. I'm not good at it, I gotta focus. So. 71 + 400 +…what year is this?

A: 2020.

S: Ok. So 71 + 400 + 2020 = 2491. Wow. I'm old.

A: By the way, I'm a Christian.

S: Of course you're. You're a Republican, so that goes without saying.

A: Do you know how old I am?

S: Dude, you're a baby. You should say, how young you are.

A: I'm talking about metaphysical age.

S: ….What?

A: Let's say, the human civilization[391] started about 6000 years ago.

S: But?

A: You have existed for 2491 years on planet earth. So, generously assuming that you, in your days, had learned all the corpus of accumulated knowledge that existed in your days, then you knew 3509 years worth of human knowledge.

S: 6000 – 2491 = 3509?

A: Yes. And if we even more generously assume that I have learned all the accumulated human knowledge, then I know 6000 years worth of knowledge. So yeah. I guess I know more than you do, Mr. Socrates.

S: Sacrilegious!

A: I learned from you, Mr. Socrates, but since you left planet earth, there have been tremendous development of human knowledge and I learned many of those later developments in science, religion, etc.

S: You can go to the devil!

---

[390] See https://en.wikipedia.org/wiki/Socrates .
[391] See https://www.universetoday.com/38125/how-long-have-humans-been-on-earth/ .

A: Oh please.

S: You are so….

A: I have a question for you, Mr. Socrates.

S: I have an answer.

A: What's heaven like?

S: How the he## should I know?

A: I mean, you live there, correct?

S: No! Who said that?

A: I mean, then what, do you reside in hades?[392]

S: Where did you get that idea?

A: …

S: Asian man, all I can tell you is, if there is such a thing as heaven, you ain't going there. Ugh uhh. No way.

A: Why not?

S: Because you're too…

A: Too what?

S: You're too politically incorrect! And you're too ignorant. Know. Thy. Self. Please.

A: I wonder whether the heaven is full of women or full of books.

S: Hmm. An interesting question. Which version of paradise do you prefer?

A: Well, let me think.

S: Take thy time, oh you Oriental man.

A: I think, I think that I'd be okay with a heaven full of books, as long as I have cigarettes, lighters, whiskey, vodka, a computer and an internet connection.

S: Man, you're asking a lot.

A: Hey. If a man chooses books over women, he's waiving a whole a lot of happiness.

S: Oh you, Asian man. Yeah, we know all about you. A bookworm perhaps?

A: Ha ha ha ha ha. I can respect your opinion about me, Mr. Socrates.

---

[392] See https://en.wikipedia.org/wiki/Hades .

S: Okay, dude. Time to go.

A: Where do you live, I wonder?

S: I live in heaven.

A: Like, paradise?

S: No. Like, sky. You didn't know?

A: I didn't know Mr. Socrates can fly.

S: Of course he can. I am Mr. Socrates and I can fly.

A: Is it because you're a metaphysical being?

S: No. Where did you get that idea?

A: You said you left planet earth like 3000 years ago.

S: That was a figure of speech, bookwormy Asian man.

A: …

S: Don't you see my wings?

A: Oh. Okay?

S: I'm a bird, you nerd.

A: Ohh…..now I see….. You're that woodpecker who was pecking on my trees the other day in my Alaskan backyard…

S: My name is Mr. Socrates.

A: Did you name yourself?

S: Yes. You threw away many books. I read some of the books you threw away.

A: Oh. Whoops. But…

S: Man, if you ain't gonna read books, at least have some courtesy to drive to a library and donate them, instead of trashing them. That's why you can't enter the Kingdom of Heaven. You are a great despiser of knowledge. Who throws a book away? You. Only you.

A: Oh I'm sorry.

S: Apology accepted. Now, have a nice day.

A: Good Bye, Mr. Socrates-

//xD

Epilogue[393]

Hello everyone, thank you for your kind and generous readership //:-D We hope you enjoyed the show. Our next article to write and publish will be titled, "New Metaphysics: Didualism and Copiumology" There, we'll introduce some more interesting concepts.[394]

Thank you for your time and see you later, kind and generous ladies and gentlemen //:-)

---

[393] This paper was started being written on 10/26/2020. It was finished being written on 11/15/2020 //:-)

[394] See https://en.wikipedia.org/wiki/The_Road_Not_Taken .

Ideological Analysis[395]

Huhnkie Lee[396]

A new methodology is introduced. Ideological analysis, or ideo-analysis, is a metaphysical model to help us understand individual behaviorism and social phenomena. This is a continuation of discussion on ideologies from the previous paper.[397] *This paper contains social critiques and many a controversial idea. Readers' discretion advised. //!-)*

Prologue

Hello everyone, thank you for your kind and generous readership //:-D This is an academic research paper, but I will keep it as entertaining as possible. Please enjoy-

I. Metaphysics of Ideologies, Revisited

1. Trajectory of ideologies: a Common Pattern

In the previous paper, we adopted mathematics and physics in order to theoretically model the phenomena of ideologies. What we have observed can be summarized as follows:

anti-x-ism → *pro-x-ism* → *hyper-pro-x-ism* → *gradual disappearance of x-ism*

For the concept variable[398] of x, we can put "femin", "semit", "ebony", or "lgbt".

For instance, there once used to be antigayism. Then there came progayism in an effort to bring up lgbt community members' rights equal to the rights of the straight people. But, once the increased mass of the progayism became an unstoppable juggernaut with immense inertia, the progayism didn't stop pushing to enhance the rights of lgbt people. Progayism kept on pushing and it became a hyper-progayism, which advocates for superior rights of lgbt people, over and beyond those of straight people. For instance, hyperprogayists harshly criticized straight people when the straight people celebrated their straightness[399]. Hyperprogayists characterized people who criticize gayism as bigots, haters, religious fanatics, or the ignorant, the un-enlightened. Hyperprogayism combined with cancel-culture-ism has caused many antigayists to lose their jobs, close their businesses, etc.[400]

---

[395] This paper is dedicated to the author's family members and friends who also played parental figures, eternal inspirers, continuing educators, and spiritual mentors to him in being there for him when no one else was, who corrected him when he was wrong, and who taught him life lessons and everlasting wisdoms. Started being written on 11/20/2020.

[396] A lawyer by trade, a mathematician by hobby, a U.S. Army veteran by record, a former computer programmer, a prior PhD candidate in computational biology, a former actor/writer/director/indie-filmmaker/background-music-composer. Born in the USA, 1978.

[397] See Metaphysics and Physics: The Parallel Universes of Philosophy and Science, viXra.org e-Print archive, viXra:2011.0125 https://vixra.org/abs/2011.0125 .

[398] See Variable (mathematics) - Wikipedia https://en.wikipedia.org/wiki/Variable_(mathematics) .

The common pattern of behavior was observed in the recent hyper-pro-ebony-ism, commonly known as BLM.[401] Again, BLM started with a good intention and a venerable cause. But, once blm-ism gained mainstream status, with majoritarian support, the ideology started to advocate for superior rights of African Americans, and started to capitalize the letter 'b' in the word, "Black." Basically, post-covid-19-blm-ism has become a black supremacism, where the hyper-pro-ebony-ists vehemently criticize and characterize people as racists, if they say, "Brown Lives Matter," "Asian Lives Matter," "Caucasian Lives Matter", or "All Lives Matter." But it probably is the case that there is this silent majority of African Americans, who do not support the contemporary BLM-ism. It probably is because those majority of African Americans are smart, wise, beautiful, diligent, and successful, and thus they don't have any complaints about this world and society.

The pattern echoes main ideologies of the past. Way back when communism was the king in the West, an anti-communist was branded and used to be called, a "reactionary." In the West, where communism was not popular, a communist used to be called a "commie."

2. Four-Tiered Hierarchy of Metaphysical Universe, Revisited

In previous paper, we introduced a hierarchical model:

God

Angel

Ideology

Human

Which we revised to a more down-to-earth version, a circular hierarchical model as follows:

---

[399] See Straight pride - Wikipedia https://en.wikipedia.org/wiki/Straight_pride .

[400] See "The Law of Antigayism" by Huhnkie Lee (bepress.com) https://works.bepress.com/huhnkie_lee/3/ .

[401] See Black Lives Matter - Wikipedia https://en.wikipedia.org/wiki/Black_Lives_Matter .

People

Media

Ideology

People

By “media”, we mean basically, people with higher power. Like, a studio executive who gets to select what movie or TV show gets aired or distributed internationally; a film festival panelist who gets to decide what movies get shown in the film festival; an academic journal editor who picks and chooses which paper, out of many submitted papers, gets to be published and read in the journal; an editor in a news corporation who gets to select what news is news-worthy enough to be broadcast so everyone can see on TV; a legislator who gets a lot of emails from constituents with legislative ideas, and who gets to choose one legislative proposal so that the chosen idea would become a law one day.

The media controls what ideologies would see the light of the day. And once an ideology is crowned with the kingship of majoritarian status, the ideology commands dominion over the people. But, people control the media, because, without viewership, a news channel can’t make money. People control politicians too, as no politician can do politics without the support of the voters, the people. So, the circular model above explains many things and it seems to work. It appears to be a good model.

3. Seven-Tiered Hierarchy of Physico-Metaphysical Universe, Revisited

God

Angel

Ideology

Human

Animal

Plant

Object

We introduced the model above and let us review the concept therein. Let’s say, we, *Homo sapiens,* watch a documentary about Alaskan grizzly bears, who would come down to the river in autumn season to fish salmons. We, humans, enjoy watching the scenery where bears catch, kill, and eat salmons. But, if salmons had feelings, they would really hate us. They may say,

> *"You Homo sapiens. You're horrible. We, the salmons, we swim miles and miles and you, the people, smile when bears kill us and suck our brains and eat us?*
>
> *"You people are horrible. You enjoy watching us dying and being killed by bears?*
>
> *"Is this salmonic struggle of life and death an amusement and entertainment for you, oh Homo sapiens, the prime animal species, the apex predator, the one and only animal species who pride themselves as image of High and Almighty God?*
>
> *"Look at yourselves, oh you the people. The Homo sapiens. Know thy selves!"*

//xD

Jokes aside, let us think about an analogy. People hurt or even kill each other in wars and protests over ideological differences, like democracy vs. communism, or liberalism vs. conservatism. When that happens, entities like angels and God who occupy higher echelons than us humans or ideologies, perhaps they're watching us from above, sitting in a couch with potato chips and hyper-buttered popcorns. Perhaps they're being entertained when people struggle to survive and thrive.

Or, in the down-to-earth version, angels are medias and God is the people. Don't we all enjoy the escapism of watching some horror flicks or crime TV documentaries, or reading books about WWI or WWII, where many people fight and die? Aren't we being entertained even, when we read the news of some horrendous crimes? Isn't that why news channels report those incidents, because such news is very popular and thus make the media make a lot of money? Yes, it's horrible but it's a fact. It's an inconvenient truth.[402]

Why do people enjoy scary movies? Probably for the same reason why we enjoy a rollercoaster ride in an amusement park. The thrill of virtual danger, where we know for sure that we are safe, but we do experience some perceived danger and fear therefrom. Crime news, why do we read about it? Perhaps to get informed about the real danger in the world. Or perhaps to escape for a minute from the boredom of our mundane daily lives, by reading something out of ordinary, something shocking. Let's admit it. We the people, have some dark side in us. We the people, we're dirty.[403]

---

[402] The phrase, not idea, was adopted from a documentary by an ex-VP, Mr. Al Gore. See An Inconvenient Truth - Wikipedia https://en.wikipedia.org/wiki/An_Inconvenient_Truth .

//xD

II. The Problem of Criminalism

1. Criminalism as an Ideology

In English language, an ideology is roughly defined as a set of ideas that some people advocated for.[404] In contrast, in the previous paper,[405] we defined an ideology as a force that exerts control and influence upon some people, with an analogy to the concept of force vector field in physics and mathematics. In the same previous paper, we alternatively defined an ideology as a set of rules that governs a group of people who abide by such rules, who therefore can be called subscribers of the ideology.

Some individuals commit crimes multiple times in their lives. And in that sense, their repeated behaviorism also known as recidivism can be thought to be caused by a force field that directs and motivates those individuals toward the direction of criminality. This way, criminalism is an ideology in our definition of ideology, though it is a behaviorism rather than an advocacy according to English dictionary definition.

2. Propagation of an Ideology in Generality: a Biological Model[406]

An ideology spreads like a virus.[407] Let us review virus spreads. Say, a group of virus comes to an animal's body. If the animal's immune system is weakened due to lack of rest, over-work, or lack of healthy diet or lack of regular exercise, then the viral invaders will be able to overcome the animal's antibody soldiers. Once this happens, virus start to replicate itself and multiply, using the resources like energy and molecular materials of the animal host's body.

---

[403] See 25 Important Bible Verses About Sinners (5 Major Truths To Know) (biblereasons.com) https://biblereasons.com/sinners/ ; 20 Bible verses about Dirt (knowing-jesus.com) https://bible.knowing-jesus.com/topics/Dirt .

[404] See Ideology | Definition of Ideology by Merriam-Webster (merriam-webster.com) https://www.merriam-webster.com/dictionary/ideology ; Ideology - Wikipedia https://en.wikipedia.org/wiki/Ideology .

[405] See Metaphysics and Physics: The Parallel Universes of Philosophy and Science, viXra.org e-Print archive, viXra:2011.0125 https://vixra.org/abs/2011.0125 .

[406] See Scientific modelling - Wikipedia https://en.wikipedia.org/wiki/Scientific_modelling .

[407] See Virus - Wikipedia https://en.wikipedia.org/wiki/Virus . Also see Yeast in the Bible (44 instances) (knowing-jesus.com) https://bible.knowing-jesus.com/words/Yeast , especially the parts where Mr. Jesus talked about yeast in several parables.

Then the huge number of the virus in the animal start to get out of the animal, and then get into another animal's body and repeat the life cycle process of defeating the immune system, reproduction, and propagation.

Any ideology works the same way. An ideology can be abstracted as follows:

pro/anti - X - ism

X can be any concept in the world. For instance, let's say Adam watched a movie named x and he really liked it. So he becomes a pro-x-ist. And because he was overwhelmingly impressed by the movie, he starts to talk about the movie to his friends. Adam is not being paid from x's filmmakers or distributors, but rather Adam paid to watch that movie. But Adam is advertising for the movie x, for free. And when Adam talks about, writes about the movie x, Adam is using his own energy and time in spreading the words, the concept of the movie. Adam here is being the vector[408] the words-of-mouth spread, the conduit of propagation of the movie x.

3. To Undestand the Problem

Our goal here is to solve the problem of crimes. To solve a problem, we first need to understand the nature of the problem. Then we can come up with a solution of crime prevention.

Wise parents advise their children to stay away from bad group of people in school.[409] It's because wise parents know that good or bad influences come from other people that their children hang out with, socialize with, be surrounded by. Thus is the term, peer pressure.[410] How come today's young people, even some adults too, engage in tattoos[411] and piercings[412] that have no practical values but cause inconvenience in daily lives like washing and eating, or make them look dirty? Possibly they may have wanted to fit in, felt the need to belong to their peers. In year 2020, tattoo-piercism is ubiquitous in America, but it was not so three decades ago. The pandemic of tattoo-piercism spread quite fast in America.

Anyways, back to the main topic of criminalism. In big or mid-sized cities consisting of many subdivided towns, there are neighborhoods commonly referred to as ghettos,[413] or inner-cities.[414] Basically, it's an area where housing and rents are cheaper than other parts of the city, because the area is less hygienic and less safe and thus less desirable to live in. People who can only afford to live in inner cities are probably the ones who have jobs that pay less. The reason why they have lesser paying jobs would be because they lack education or highly trained job skills that would be more lucrative and pay more.

---

[408] See Vector (biology) - Simple English Wikipedia, the free encyclopedia https://simple.wikipedia.org/wiki/Vector_(biology) .

[409] See 3 Moves of Mencius' Mother | LifeChurch (trivalleylifechurch.org) .

[410] See Peer pressure - Wikipedia http://www.trivalleylifechurch.org/2013/07/15/3-moves-of-mencius-mother/ .

[411] See Tattoo - Wikipedia https://en.wikipedia.org/wiki/Tattoo .

[412] See Body piercing - Wikipedia https://en.wikipedia.org/wiki/Body_piercing .

[413] See Ghetto - Wikipedia https://en.wikipedia.org/wiki/Ghetto .

[414] See Inner city - Wikipedia https://en.wikipedia.org/wiki/Inner_city .

4. The Problem of Causation[415] vs. Correlation[416]

Criminality is a complex problem, so we keep stepping back to cover the basics. But we'll get there, we'll get to the bottom of understanding the problem and we will solve it //:-)

Causation is a big topic in philosophy, as well as in jurisprudence. Correlation is also a big topic in statistics and social sciences like sociology or psychology or economics or political science.

There is a definite correlation between poverty and criminality. There exceptions, notable ones, of course. Mr. former president, one Abraham Lincoln, for instance, was born poor.[417] A self-made man and an American dream achiever in their truest senses, Mr. Lincoln was poor but he studied hard, and worked hard, and later reached the top of the world by becoming one of the most celebrated president of the United States.

Probably Mr. Lincoln had poor but very wise parents whose home education heavily emphasized ethics, morality, hard work, and strict discipline. So Mr. Lincoln was one of those fortunate individuals who inherited the metaphysical assets of virtues from his parents.

Gold is a precious metal and a natural resource. Unlike air and oxygen, the distribution of gold is not even on planet earth. Some regions are rich in gold and some other regions do not have gold. Likewise, metaphysical assets are not evenly distributed in human world.[418] Some parents emphasize discipline and educate, train their kids to work hard, study hard, from early on in their youthful ages. But not all parents are like that, possibly because their own parents weren't like that. Hence, the uneven distribution of precious metaphysical resources like discipline, morality, ethics, knowledge, wisdom, etc.

We are not passing some judgments on some parents. Our objective is to educate parents so they educate their kids so there be no more crimes on earth. We shoot for the moon,[419] ladies and gentlemen //!-)

---

[415] See Causality - Wikipedia https://en.wikipedia.org/wiki/Causality ; Causation (law) - Wikipedia https://en.wikipedia.org/wiki/Causation_(law) .

[416] See Correlation and dependence - Wikipedia https://en.wikipedia.org/wiki/Correlation_and_dependence .

[417] See Abraham Lincoln - Wikipedia https://en.wikipedia.org/wiki/Abraham_Lincoln .

[418] See Online Bible | Biblica - The International Bible Society https://www.biblica.com/bible/niv/proverbs/8/ .

[419] See Smash Mouth - All Star Lyrics | AZLyrics.com https://www.azlyrics.com/lyrics/smashmouth/allstar.html ; SHOOT FOR THE MOON | meaning in the Cambridge English Dictionary https://dictionary.cambridge.org/dictionary/english/shoot-for-the-moon .

5. Evolution and Recursion

In the previous paper,[420] we observed that a human baby is more like an animal, and as the baby grows up, it becomes more like a human being, and as the person becomes more saintly, the person becomes more like God. In biology, a similar concept is known as comparative embryology.[421]

Basically, the idea is like this. In macro scale in time, humans used to be animals, which are essentially hunters and gatherers. Later on, humans evolved to learn to farms, make tools, and even later on, humans start to learn mathematics, physics, engineering and invent machines. That's the human evolution that happened over past tens of thousands of years.[422]

Likewise, in a micro scale in time, a baby is like an animal, then it learns to crawl, walk, and run or swim or bike, and as it becomes an adult, the person learns to drive a car, sail a boat, or even fly an airplane. That's the evolution of a human that happens over decades in an individual level.

In the macro evolution and micro evolution examples above, we can see a definite parallel, a similarity. In math,[423] it's known as self-similarity,[424] which is commonly observed in nature, in spatially recursive patterns like tree branches.[425] Mostly, mathematicians and computer scientists study spatial self-similarity, but what we observed above regarding micro/macro evolution is an instance of temporal self-similarity, or temporal recursion.

6. Animalistic Survivalism

The thing is, when a baby is born, it doesn't just become a humanly being as it grows up. It's like, not everyone becomes a metaphysical saint as one ages. For a baby and then a child to grow up and become a law-abiding, hard-working citizen of a country, the child needs to be chided, disciplined, educated, and refined. Some people had the blessing of wise parents who taught them the virtue of diligence and ethics, but other had not such luck.

---

[420] See Metaphysics and Physics: The Parallel Universes of Philosophy and Science, viXra.org e-Print archive, viXra:2011.0125 https://vixra.org/abs/2011.0125 .

[421] See Comparative Embryology- Principle, Significance | Developmental Biology | Microbe Notes https://microbenotes.com/comparative-embryology/ ; Comparative embryology - Wikipedia https://en.wikipedia.org/wiki/Comparative_embryology .

[422] See Evolution - Wikipedia https://en.wikipedia.org/wiki/Evolution ; Anthropology - Wikipedia https://en.wikipedia.org/wiki/Anthropology .

[423] See Fractal - Wikipedia https://en.wikipedia.org/wiki/Fractal .

[424] See Self-similarity - Wikipedia https://en.wikipedia.org/wiki/Self-similarity .

[425] See Recursion (computer science) - Wikipedia https://en.wikipedia.org/wiki/Recursion_(computer_science) .

The truth is, nobody gets to choose their parents, as everyone is born into this world without a free will. No one gets to choose the country or era of one's birth, like birth date or place of birth. No gets to choose one's race either. Actually, no gets to choose to be born. Free will is one of the most overrated concepts. We don't really get to choose anything. What we think as our free will or freedom or right to choose, mostly ideologies make us choose that particular option.

Anyways. Criminals are like animals. And they regard other people as animals. What do animals do? They hunt and gather. In the world of animals, theft, assault, and murder are the normal ways of life. That's what animals do. They steal and kill each other. And that's exactly what criminals do. They never had a chance to evolve from animal level to a more metaphysically higher lever, that is, a legitimate member of a civilized society. To criminals who are like animals, life is about animalistic survival where they see people as animals to prey on, to steal from, and even to rape and murder. Welcome to the jungle, ladies and gentlemen.[426]

7. A Solution: Religion

Religions are mostly about traditional ethics and morality.[427] For instance, Quran of Islam teaches men to lower their gaze when the men encounter females.[428] Mr. Jesus of bible in Christianity teaches men the same kind of lesson of visual abstinence.[429] In sum, moral muscle building is like physical muscle building: you start lifting small weights, then increase the weight level so you can lift heavier weights in order to have stronger body.

Metaphysical musculature works the same way: you resist small temptations first, then you resist larger temptations, in order to become a morally stronger person. This is how a character is built, and it does not come automatically with natural aging. One needs to make constant efforts build one's character, refine one's personality. And good thing is, we're not alone in this. Good friends correct their friends when they err, as if good parents correct their beloved children.[430]

---

[426] See Guns N' Roses - Welcome To The Jungle Lyrics | AZLyrics.com https://www.azlyrics.com/lyrics/gunsnroses/welcometothejungle.html .

[427] See Religion - Wikipedia https://en.wikipedia.org/wiki/Religion .

[428] See Surah An-Nur - 24:30 | Quran.com https://quran.com/24/30?translations=18,19,22,85,84,101 ; First and second glance at women - Islam Question & Answer (islamqa.info) https://islamqa.info/en/answers/1774/first-and-second-glance-at-women .

[429] See Matthew 5:28 But I tell you that anyone who looks at a woman to lust after her has already committed adultery with her in his heart. (biblehub.com) https://biblehub.com/matthew/5-28.htm ; 30 Important Bible Verses About Adultery (8 Major Things To Know) (biblereasons.com) https://biblereasons.com/adultery/ .

[430] See 11 Bible verses about Correction (knowing-jesus.com) https://bible.knowing-jesus.com/topics/Correction .

8. More about Islam

Well, we're talking about a taboo topic here, religion. Let's go it all the way. Islam is a great religion that gained popularity in many different parts of the world, including south east Asia.[431] So it may be fair to say that Islam is proven to be a good religion as it gained both temporal and spatial objectivity, as Islam has been practiced for more than 1000 years in time, over vast spaces like Africa, Europe, Asia, and Americas.

However, compared to other traditional major religions like Buddhism (500 BC),[432] Confucianism (500 BC),[433] Taoism (500 BC),[434] Judaism (1300 BC),[435] Zoroastrianism (700 BC),[436] or Christianity (0 AD),[437] Islam (570 AD)[438] is a relatively newer and younger religion. So it is probably correct to say, if not politically correct to say, that Islam is a religion that is still in the process of evolving and growing and maturing, from big time scale of things.

In today's Islam, hijab wearing is a standard for females.[439] We can appreciate male Muslims' effort to be visually abstinent, but we need to examine it further in order to weigh in whether hijab-ism is a sound practice, a good rule, a sound ideology or not.

Let us travel in time and observe Prophet Muhammad Allah. The Prophet had a huge respect for women and he took care of widows. Back in those days, anywhere in the world, polygamy[440] was a legitimate practice, because wars were common and many a man died in wars and thus there were more women than men in population. In the history of Islam, some of the first believers of the Prophet's messages were women. Even further, some of the first teachers of Islam were women, namely, the Prophet's wives.[441]

---

[431] See Islamism - Wikipedia https://en.wikipedia.org/wiki/Islamism ; Islam - Wikipedia https://en.wikipedia.org/wiki/Islam .

[432] See Buddhism - Wikipedia https://en.wikipedia.org/wiki/Buddhism ; Gautama Buddha - Wikipedia https://en.wikipedia.org/wiki/Gautama_Buddha .

[433] See Confucianism - Wikipedia https://en.wikipedia.org/wiki/Confucianism ; Confucius - Wikipedia https://en.wikipedia.org/wiki/Confucius .

[434] See Taoism - Wikipedia https://en.wikipedia.org/wiki/Taoism ; Laozi - Wikipedia https://en.wikipedia.org/wiki/Laozi .

[435] See Judaism - Wikipedia https://en.wikipedia.org/wiki/Judaism ; Moses - Wikipedia https://en.wikipedia.org/wiki/Moses .

[436] See Zoroastrianism - Wikipedia https://en.wikipedia.org/wiki/Zoroastrianism ; Zoroaster - Wikipedia https://en.wikipedia.org/wiki/Zoroaster .

[437] See Christianity - Wikipedia https://en.wikipedia.org/wiki/Christianity ; Jesus - Wikipedia https://en.wikipedia.org/wiki/Jesus .

[438] See Muhammad - Wikipedia https://en.wikipedia.org/wiki/Muhammad .

[439] See Hijab - Wikipedia https://en.wikipedia.org/wiki/Hijab ; Burqa - Wikipedia https://en.wikipedia.org/wiki/Burqa .

[440] See Polygamy - Wikipedia https://en.wikipedia.org/wiki/Polygamy .

[441] See Women in Islam - Wikipedia https://en.wikipedia.org/wiki/Women_in_Islam ; Education in Islamic History | islam.ru http://islam.ru/en/content/story/education-islamic-history ; Muhammad's wives - Wikipedia

It is uncertain whether the Prophet would approve today's practice of hijab-ism or burqa-ism. So, let us use logic and conduct a rational analysis. The Prophet forbade men from gazing at women. But if women's whole bodies are wrapped in a non-transparent clothing like hijab or burqa, then there is nothing for men to gaze at. That would make lives easy for men who practice visual abstinence. Perhaps, too easy. Under hijab-ism, there is no temptation for men to resist. Doesn't this defeat the purpose of the Prophet's teaching, which is all about resisting the temptation, about the moral and ethical discipline, about restraint and control and curb over male's animalistic desire?

The thing is, requiring females to wear hijabs or burqas, isn't it an unfair burden-shifting? The objective of the anti-gazing-rule is to promote sexual morality and sexual discipline in men. But if men are requiring women to do all the work in prevention of sexual immorality, that goes against the Prophet's intention of disciplining men. That's a logical contradiction and therefore a mathematical proof of the unsoundness of pro-hijab-ism.

Now let's get down to earth and turn our attention to the Middle East. Violence has plagued in the Middle East more so than other regions for a long time.[442] One theory is as follows:

> *At some point in the history of Islam, men started to require women to where hijabs.*
>
> *Men can't see women's natural beauty on the streets.*
>
> *Men became less happy, as there's no more eye-candy.*
>
> *Men became more violent than otherwise.*

That's one possibility. The solution to terrorism in the Middle East? Get rid of hijabs and burqas. Let men be happy.[443] Then violence shall cease.

---

https://en.wikipedia.org/wiki/Muhammad%27s_wives . One of the Prophet's wives, Ms. Aisha, especially, was a scholar in Islam.

[442] See Explore Global Terrorist Attacks – Susan Li | Data Ninja (susanli2016.github.io) https://susanli2016.github.io/Terrorist-Attack/ ; Islamic terrorism - Wikipedia https://en.wikipedia.org/wiki/Islamic_terrorism .

[443] See MARY POPPINS - A SPOONFUL OF SUGAR LYRICS (songlyrics.com) http://www.songlyrics.com/mary-poppins/a-spoonful-of-sugar-lyrics/ .

Of course, we men, should abstain from directly gazing at women, as it's rude. But, we men want this world to be a beautiful place and women are beautiful. And women are happy when they're appreciated by men. The solution is, let women freely express their natural beauty with stylish clothing, and let men enjoy the view sideways, with side vision, as opposed to the rude, animalistic and embarrassing and unseemly, undisciplined direct gazing.

One more thing, real quick. This chapter is about crime prevention. We want women to be strong and beautiful, so what we recommend women is the learning of martial arts,[444] which is a great cardio exercise. We want women to be able to do kicks and punches so they can protect themselves. In this day and age of internet, all the knowledge is in one's hand, the cellphone with internet connection. One can learn martial arts from free instructional videos in online stream medias, like, YouTube for instance.[445]

III. Solutions for Criminalism

1. From Religious Point of View

A question: was Mr. Jesus born as a saint, or had he become a saint by parental education and his personal effort to refine his character and to better his personality?

.

..

…

….

…..

Well, of course, the answer depends on whether a person subscribes to the ideology of Christianism or not. This paper is an academic text, but we do appreciate the value of religions.

---

[444] See Martial arts - Wikipedia https://en.wikipedia.org/wiki/Martial_arts .

[445] See YouTube - Wikipedia https://en.wikipedia.org/wiki/YouTube .

But, at least as for other saints of other religions, it is generally agreed that they were not born as saints but they became saints later on their lives by personal endurance and self-imposed moralistic training.

We have previously observed that the micro-evolution of an individual human being and the macro-evolution of the *Homo sapiens* as a species parallel each other. In the history of animals, some species managed to evolve out of ape level[446] and became the species of humans who later on became the apex species that governs over all other animal species.

In a micro-evolution of individual human level, some manage to evolve out of animalistic stage and develop the moral muscle of patience, tolerance, diligence, endurance, discipline, etc. Only morally strong people can live without breaking laws for 90 years. In other words, to live for 90 years with clean record and no criminal record, the person has to have a very strong moral muscle in order to resist the temptations of anger, adultery, illegality, immorality, etc.

Car accidents often happen because neither of two drivers wanted to yield to the other, and in some of those incidents, people may get injured, permanently disabled, or even die. Patience, caution, law-abidance, and tolerance is the key to prevent car accidents, violence, fights, etc.

2. Happiness Aspect

Another aspect of the issue of safety is happiness. In schools, they don't teach students how to be happy, just like they don't teach how to be a good parent, even how to be a good person. Perhaps schools should start doing so.

So, let us learn how to be happy. Of course, different people pursue happiness in different ways.[447] It depends on how the person grew up in what kind of environment, in what neighborhood, and on what type of parents they had.[448] No matter what kind of happiness one pursues, it's better be a legal and moral one.

Some people, regrettably, pursue happiness by taking mufflers off their vehicles or bikes so they make alarmingly loud noise on public streets, which may injure other drivers' eardrums or cause dangerous distractions that may lead to accidents. Some pursue their happiness by honking at other drivers for petty reasons out of impatience, or by violating speed limits on highways, or by tailgating other drivers, which all are dangerous activities.

---

[446] See Nirvana - Wikipedia https://en.wikipedia.org/wiki/Nirvana ; Reincarnation - Wikipedia https://en.wikipedia.org/wiki/Reincarnation .

[447] See Life, Liberty and the pursuit of Happiness - Wikipedia https://en.wikipedia.org/wiki/Life,_Liberty_and_the_pursuit_of_Happiness .

[448] See Nature versus nurture - Wikipedia https://en.wikipedia.org/wiki/Nature_versus_nurture . Well, our position is such that we more emphasize on ideological influences on an individual.

Yet, some others pursue their happiness by committing crimes, by hurting other people's feelings or well-beings. This world has a full spectrum of immorality and illegality. Alas, ladies and gents, 'tis a dog eat dog world that we're living in.[449] Fortunately, we have great teachers in humanity. For instance, Mr. Jesus said, "turn the other cheek,"[450] and "do not ever get angry,"[451] "pray for those who mistreat you."[452]

Why do crimes and immorality exist in the world? One possibility is that some people have not learned to produce happiness in the right way. Some people are rude to others because they are unhappy and angry, or perhaps because they're jealous of others who are happy. If everyone is happy in this world, probably violence will cease to exist. So yes, we need to learn how to produce moral and legal happiness in our lives.

3. Happiness 101

We will take the risk of turning this research paper into a Victorian morality theater,[453] because, it's just too important an issue. Yes, we're trying to save the world. //xD

Anyhow. Not everyone is career-oriented. Some people make their lives happy by engaging in healthy hobbies, by raising families, or via helping others in volunteerism. The bottom line is, we need to study how a person can be always happy. Well, happiness is an inherently relativistic concept, because no one can feel happiness unless one experiences unhappiness beforehand.[454]

---

[449] See Dog eat dog - Idioms by The Free Dictionary https://idioms.thefreedictionary.com/dog+eat+dog .

[450] See 19 Bible verses about Turning The Other Cheek (knowing-jesus.com) https://bible.knowing-jesus.com/topics/Turning-The-Other-Cheek .

[451] See Matthew 5:22 But I tell you that anyone who is angry with his brother will be subject to judgment. Again, anyone who says to his brother, 'Raca,' will be subject to the Sanhedrin. But anyone who says, 'You fool!' will be subject to the fire of hell. (biblehub.com) https://www.biblehub.com/matthew/5-22.htm .

[452] See 50 Bible verses about Enemies (knowing-jesus.com) https://bible.knowing-jesus.com/topics/Enemies . We, as secular scholars and private academics, do not know whether Christian prayers work. If we pray for enemies so they repent and become better people after they mistreated us, we do not know whether they would repent and become better people for real. But, at the very least, by praying for them, the rude and mean people, we're forgiving them and forgetting their misdeeds and malfeasances and sins. Such Christian attitude toward the world and the people gives us peace of mind and make us sleep better at night. Religion is, perhaps, the best psychiatric drug available to us. Also, let us introduce this concept of "educated catharsis." When a man educated in songwriting gets his heart broken by rejection from a lady he had crush on, he transform his pain into a poem or a song. A man educated in poem writing would express his disappointment into the language of poetry, as opposed to committing violent crimes of battery, rape, or murder like we see in the news. So, crime prevention, it's all about education. People get their feelings hurt, but if they're educated, they can write essays or poems or songs, instead of letting the bad feelings out via the channels of violence and crimes that would ruin their and others' lives.

[453] See An Overview Of Victorian Morality | Betterhelp https://www.betterhelp.com/advice/morality/an-overview-of-victorian-morality/ ; Theatre in the Victorian era - Wikipedia https://en.wikipedia.org/wiki/Theatre_in_the_Victorian_era .

There is a saying that goes, "idle hands are devil's playgrounds."[455] When a person is doing nothing, s/he gets bored. When a person has a left-over energy, s/he won't be sleepy. The solution is, to find something to do. One recommendation is, learn something new. In this day and era of internet, all the knowledge is in one's hand, all for free, as long as one can pay the cellphone bill.

We can learn math, science, foreign languages, history, singing, dancing, musical instruments, hunting and trapping and fishing, wild plant foraging, martial arts, all from free online websites like Wikipedia or YouTube or others. Self-education cost no money. How about exercise? It does not cost money to run in a public park. How about diet?[456] It cost less money to eat less. When one is healthy, one can enjoy the pain-free body. Personal hygiene, spending more time with hairstyle, spending some time and some money in used-goods stores to by matching colors of clothes, healthy diet and regular exercise, self-education, they all are some ways for people to produce happiness in their lives.

4. A Policy Perspective

Let's talk about jail system.[457] A prison is called with many names like penitentiary (place of repentance), or correctional facility. Basically, we want a prison to be a place of rehabilitation[458] or an educational institution even.

When the author ran for Alaska State Senate Republican Primary in August of 2020,[459] he went to a political meeting. And the host of the event asked the candidates, "what would be the top 3 legislations you would sponsor if you get elected?" And one of the author's answers was, "I would introduce a bill that would make it mandatory for prisoners to work in prison, so that prison cost would be paid by prisoners' labors, not by taxpayers'." The idea got mixed reviews and this author didn't get elected.[460] //xD

---

[454] See The Steve Miller Band - Jet Airliner Lyrics | AZLyrics.com https://www.azlyrics.com/lyrics/stevemillerband/jetairliner.html .

[455] See Proverbs 16:27-29 TLB - Idle hands are the devil's workshop; - Bible Gateway https://www.biblegateway.com/passage/?search=Proverbs+16%3A27-29&version=TLB .

[456] See 27 Bible verses about Fasting, Practice Of (knowing-jesus.com) https://bible.knowing-jesus.com/topics/Fasting,-Practice-Of .

[457] See Prison - Wikipedia https://en.wikipedia.org/wiki/Prison .

[458] See Drug rehabilitation - Wikipedia https://en.wikipedia.org/wiki/Drug_rehabilitation .

[459] See Voter's Equation by Huhnkie Lee :: SSRN https://papers.ssrn.com/sol3/papers.cfm?abstract_id=3701959 .

[460] Of course, jokes aside, the reasons why the author didn't get elected are multiple and they're fully analyzed in the aforementioned paper, Voter's Equation by Huhnkie Lee :: SSRN https://papers.ssrn.com/sol3/papers.cfm?abstract_id=3701959 . In fact, many people, if not most, liked the idea the author presented.

So. Let's examine the idea. Prison labor, of course, is not a new concept.[461] Some people are concerned that the policy of forced labor in prison smacks of unconstitutional slavery.[462] Let's talk about labor. Is there such a thing as 'voluntary labor'? Of course, there is volunteerism, which is a highly venerable and meritorious activity. But, when it comes to Monday to Friday, 8am-to-5pm-with-1-hour-lunch kind of job, how many people would rather wake up every morning and go to work, as opposed to taking an early retirement?

If prisoners do not work, who should pay their food and shelter and clothing? It will be hard-working, law-abiding taxpayers, whose houses got broken into, whose properties got stolen or damaged, whose family members got hurt, raped, or murdered, by the people in prison. If taxpayers are paying for the food and shelter for prisoners who are sitting there doing nothing, who go to prison libraries and prison gyms for free, who get well fed and clothed thanks to the taxpayers' hard-earned money, that kinda looks like a slavery of the people where the masters are the criminals.[463]

The idea is, let us discipline and educate prisoners whom nobody taught the value of hard work, diligence, patience, which are essential virtues to live in a civilized society, to be a legitimate, financially independent member of a community governed by law and order.

IV. The Case of Covid-19: Science, Politics, and Interaction Therebetween

1. Intermission

Alright, ladies and gents, we have so far studied intensely and now comes a break time. Like in previous papers, we shall sit back and watch a comedy gig played by two characters. Let's say, the author is interviewing an entity. Please enjoy //:-)

A: Greetings, Mr. Coronavirus, thank you for taking our request to interview via a zoom meeting.[464]

C: Oh, you're very welcome. The least I can do. But I have a question to thee.

A: What is that, Sir?

---

[461] See Penal labor in the United States - Wikipedia https://en.wikipedia.org/wiki/Penal_labor_in_the_United_States .

[462] See Thirteenth Amendment to the United States Constitution - Wikipedia https://en.wikipedia.org/wiki/Thirteenth_Amendment_to_the_United_States_Constitution .

[463] The author's personal experience in Americas, Korea, Asia, Canada, Africa, Middle East. 90% of people are nice. 10% of people are mean. This author's guess would be, 90% of slave owners in American 1700s were nice, 10% of them bad. See https://en.wikipedia.org/wiki/Gone_with_the_Wind_%28film%29 .

[464] See Zoom (software) - Wikipedia https://en.wikipedia.org/wiki/Zoom_(software) .

C: I've read your past papers. You'd invite Mr. Socrates, Mr. Jesus, Mr. Galilei to your house for in-person interviews. Why not me? Why the virtual meeting? How come you didn't invite me to your house, I wonder?

A: … well Mr. Coronavirus, you know, I'm only a human being.

C: Are you saying you didn't invite me, just because what, I'm a virus, not a *Homo sapiens*? I call that discrimination case!

A: All I can say is, Mr. Coronavirus, is that I, I'm sorry.

C: Well, I, I am sorry too. Happy thanksgiving to you by the way.

A: Thank you, Mr. Coronavirus.

C: … Hey man, you're supposed to say the same to me. Wish me a happy thanksgiving.

A: … Mister, again, I'm only a human being. There are certain things that I'm allowed to say, and there are other things that I'm disallowed to say as a *Homo sapiens.*

C: Wha wha… You people… you the people… you're so horrible.

A: Anyhow. Thank you for your time and let's get it started.

C: What do you mean by get it "started?"

A: I mean the interview, Mr.

C: Okay. Ask me a question.

A: So you're a scientist, right?

C: No. Where did you get that idea? I'm just a virus. You're confusing me with a virologist. I got no Ph.D. degree.

A: But you know yourself, like, how you replicate yourself and what you're made of.

C: Oh, that. Yes. Us, viruses, we're great admirers of Mr. Socrates. We sock it to us, the virus us. If you don't like him, sock it. Know thyself! Know thy ignorances.

A: So how does it work, Mr. Coronavirus?

C: You mean how do we work?

A: Yes. Shed some light on the subject matter to us.

C: Oh it's easy. We get into an animal's body. If the animal's immune system is inefficient because this animal is unhealthy, then the animal's antibody immune response is weakened, and we can overcome the army of the antibodies.

A: Oh?

C: Yeah, man. From then on, we kinda take it over. We steal and appropriate the animal's resources, like ATP energy and protein molecules and nucleic acids and what not. We start to self-replicate and multiply and then come out of the animal host's body in order to jump to the next weak animal. It's like a war conquest campaign, ideological activism campaign, or even a political campaign in your human world. Following me, dog?

A: … I am not a canine. I'm a human being.

C: Whoopsy- Do you understand what I'm saying, oh you *Homo sapiens*? Does that go down better?

A: …whatever, Mr. Coronavirus.

C: See, that's what's your problem, you people. You put a blame on all us, the viruses. It is your fault. Had you the people been doing all the healthy diet and regular exercises, your body being efficient, with full blood circulation, your antibodies would have killed us and we wouldn't have multiplied. You people are so unhealthy. And you point finger at us. Again, I call that discrimination, even scapegoating.

A: Wow.

C: You know what? You the people should be thanking me rather.

A: Really?!

C: Yeah?! Cuz thanks to us, viruses, you the people are evolving.

A: Are you talking about survival of the fittest?

C: Of course. It's just like in the nature. A grizzly brown bear chases down a sick buffalo and kills it, eats it, so that the rest of the buffalos in the herd don't get the diseases that the one sick buffalo was harboring.

A: Are you talking about the, so called "herd immunity"?

C: I don't like that term. I'd call it, "evolutionary approach" or "survival of the fittest policy".

A: Why not call it, "neo-eugenics policy" where people just let the 'undesirable, weak' individuals die of diseases, as opposed to trying to help them out?

C: No matter what you name it, we, the viruses, we have been helping you the humanity, since the very beginning of your human history. We the viruses ensure the next generation of *Homo sapiens* would consist of only the healthiest individuals, by culling out weak ones.

A: …

C: We viruses are just like you, humans. You humans kill animals and plants in order to survive and thrive, right? We viruses, we feed on animals and plants in order to survive and thrive. We, viruses are not that different from you, *Homo sapiens*es.

A: …

C: If you humans call us viruses monsters, devils, satans, 666's, antichrists, just because we feed on you, then you humans are those destroyers yourselves in the eyes of the plants and animals that you kill and eat. Know thyselves!

A: …

C: Look at you, you Asian Alaskan American Aging A**. You enjoy eating fried chicken gizzards? Fried chicken livers? Oh that fried chicken wings, huh? Do you care to know, what American farmed chickens would think about you?!

A: …

C: Do I have to tell you, how horrible you are, you *Homo Sapiens*es? You eat caviar, you eat bird eggs, you eat plant seeds. It's like you eat animal babies and plant babies. You eat every-thang. And you cut off plant genitals, i.e. the flowers, for what, to impress your Friday evening dates?! You amputate and mutilate plant genitals? And you smell it and call it what, nosegay? And you put flowers on your kitchen tables? Oh thou *Homo sapiens*, as a species, you are an abomination in the eyes of all animals and plants.

A: …

C: Isn't it…all…relative or relativistic?

A:…

C: We viruses are not huge fans of Einsteinian relativism. But we do like Galilean and Newtonian relativities. Me thinks, Me likes not, unnecessary complexities of Einsteinian mumbo jumbo.

A:…

C: We, the viruses, we think that all those so called PhDs in Physics, lied to us, for a century or so. They did conform, not confirm, Einsteinian Relativities. They manipulated the data, like, in confirmation bias' sake.[465]

A:…

C: We viruses do understand. College professors, they have to feed their dogs and cats and pets and spouses. They can't go against to their bosses, the students, the young and the dumb. So professors go along with these youngsters who just got liberated from two decades of conservative parenthood. That's why young people are more liberalistic. Like, rebel without cause.[466] Like, emancipation from slavery and drudgery of parenthood as a young child. Hmm?

A:…

---

[465] See https://en.wikipedia.org/wiki/Confirmation_bias .

[466] See https://en.wikipedia.org/wiki/Rebel_Without_a_Cause .

C: Anyhow. Long story shot. Me thinks, you *Homo sapiens*es, are worse than us, yeah, the virus us.

A: …

C: What, you think you are special, oh you human being? You think you get some special treatment from the nature, from the universe? No. Not. You the people are no different from any other animals. Animals get the virus, you the people get us the virus as well. And it's a good thing. Like I said, evolution. A better, healthier generation in the future. That's how the nature works.

A: …

C: See, you people are so scientifically illiterate. It takes me, a virus, to teach you the basics of biological science. Again, know thy self, know thy ignorance.

A: … wait a minute, Mr. Coronavirus.

C: What?

A: Are you …. trying to kill us or … save us??

C: Oh. Well. … You know what, I repent. I'm not trying to make light of the situation…

A: Mister Coronavirus, with all due respect Sir, your apology is not nearly good enough!! After all you have done to us, … what, did you really think it would just go away with an apology?? Look at yourself, Mr. Coronavirus.

C: … hey man, then what do you want from us?

A: Oh, we got an idea.

C: Tell us. We'll do anything for ya, yeah.

A: You're a master of mutation, correct?

C: Yes, we are.

A: Then please, mutate for us.

C: Tell me the specifics.

A: For instance, there are animal species undesirable to us.

C: Like what?

A: Blood-sucking mosquitoes.

C: … Oh, I get it. You want us to mutate such that we kill only mosquitos and not *Homo sapiens?*

A: Bingo.

C: Don't you think that's too self-serving, selfish? How about fish? You know they live on mosquito larvae. How about dragonflies, birds? You know they feed on mosquitos.

A: Trust me. They can eat something else. They won't starve to death if mosquitos go extinct.

C: Ok. Let's say we agree to do that for you the people. Then what?

A: You mean, after all mosquitos are wiped out, what else is on the menu for the next generation Coronaviruses?

C: Yes.

A: No problem. Bedbugs.

C: Eww…. Me thinks not. You people eat turkey, chicken, port, beef and stuff. And you expect us to eat what, blood-sucking mosquitos or bedbugs or cockroaches? I call that discrimination, I even call that a slavery, man. Listen to yourself.

A: But hey, you are viruses. It won't make any difference to you. A virus is consist of protein coating and a piece of single-strand DNA or RNA. All you need to replicate is a bunch of amino acids and a bunch of nucleotides. Bedbugs and mosquitos have them. They have the same alphabet soup of amino acids or ATGC stuffs like us, human beings. You won't notice a single difference.

C: Uhh…if you say so, I guess.

A: Yes, please. Do it.

C: What if some of us are vegetarian viruses?

A: Oh no problem. Please tell your vegetarian or vegan colleagues that they can mutate and feed exclusively on poison ivies and poison hemlocks.

C: Huh.

A: You and we can work together on this. We can coexist, I think.

C: Like we haven't already?

A: Oh, you're right.

C: My remote ancestor did time with Mr. Socrates, when he was in jail, you see.

A: So you said you like Mr. Socrates.

C: Yes.

A: You know Mr. Socrates' death sentence was poison hemlock cocktail.

C: Yes.

A: So yeah. Let's prevent people's death by eliminating poison hemlocks from this planet. We won't miss them.

C: That doesn’t sound like a very bad idea to me. We’ll discuss it among our viral selves, we’ll think about it.

A: Good. Goodbye, Mr. Coronavirus.

C: Oh yeah. We’ll keep in touch.

A: …..well, Goodbye, Mr. Coronavirus.

//xD[467]

---

[467] Of course, we are not making light of the Covid-19 situation and we express our sincere condolences for the people who passed away from Covid-19. But, we are using the real world phenomenon for the sake of theatrics, as any fiction is based on true stories. We are survivors. Let’s celebrate liveliness, as opposed to mourning the death. Didn’t Mr. Jesus said, “God is for the living.”? See Luke 20:38 He is not the God of the dead, but of the living, for to Him all are alive." (biblehub.com) https://biblehub.com/luke/20-38.htm ; Top 12 Bible Verses About The Armor Of God | ChristianQuotes.info https://www.christianquotes.info/top-quotes/top-12-bible-verses-about-the-armor-of-god/ .

2. Statistical Aspect: By the Numbers

According to CDC,[468] as of 11/27/2020 at the time of writing this sentence, 262,673 American died from Covid-19 since January 21, 2020.

Now, according to CDC,[469] the following table shows the annual numbers of deaths from all causes, from year 1999 to 2018:

Figure 1.

Year	Deaths	Population	Death Rate (deaths per 100,000)
1999	2391399	279040168	857
2000	2403351	281421906	854
2001	2416425	284968955	848
2002	2443387	287625193	849.5
2003	2448288	290107933	843.9
2004	2397615	292805298	818.8
2005	2448017	295516599	828.4
2006	2426264	298379912	813.1
2007	2423712	301231207	804.6
2008	2471984	304093966	812.9
2009	2437163	306771529	794.5
2010	2468435	308745538	799.5
2011	2515458	311591917	807.3
2012	2543279	313914040	810.2
2013	2596993	316128839	821.5
2014	2626418	318857056	823.7
2015	2712630	321418820	844
2016	2744248	323127513	849.3
2017	2813503	325719178	863.8
2018	2839205	327167434	867.8

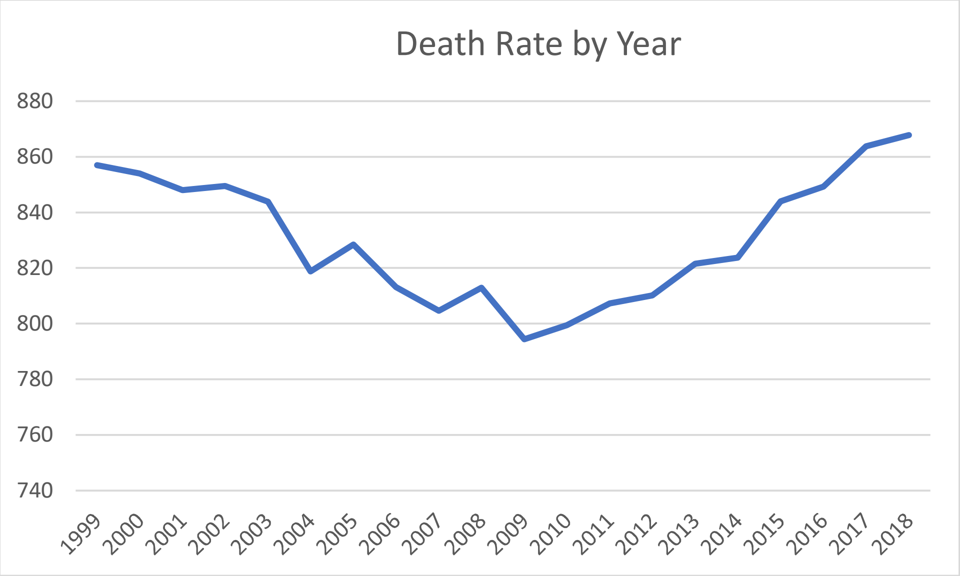
---

[468] See CDC COVID Data Tracker https://covid.cdc.gov/covid-data-tracker/#cases_casesper100klast7days .

[469] See Underlying Cause of Death, 1999-2018 Results Form (cdc.gov) https://wonder.cdc.gov/ucd-icd10.html ; https://wonder.cdc.gov/ .

If we plot a graph, it looks like this:[470]

Figure 2.

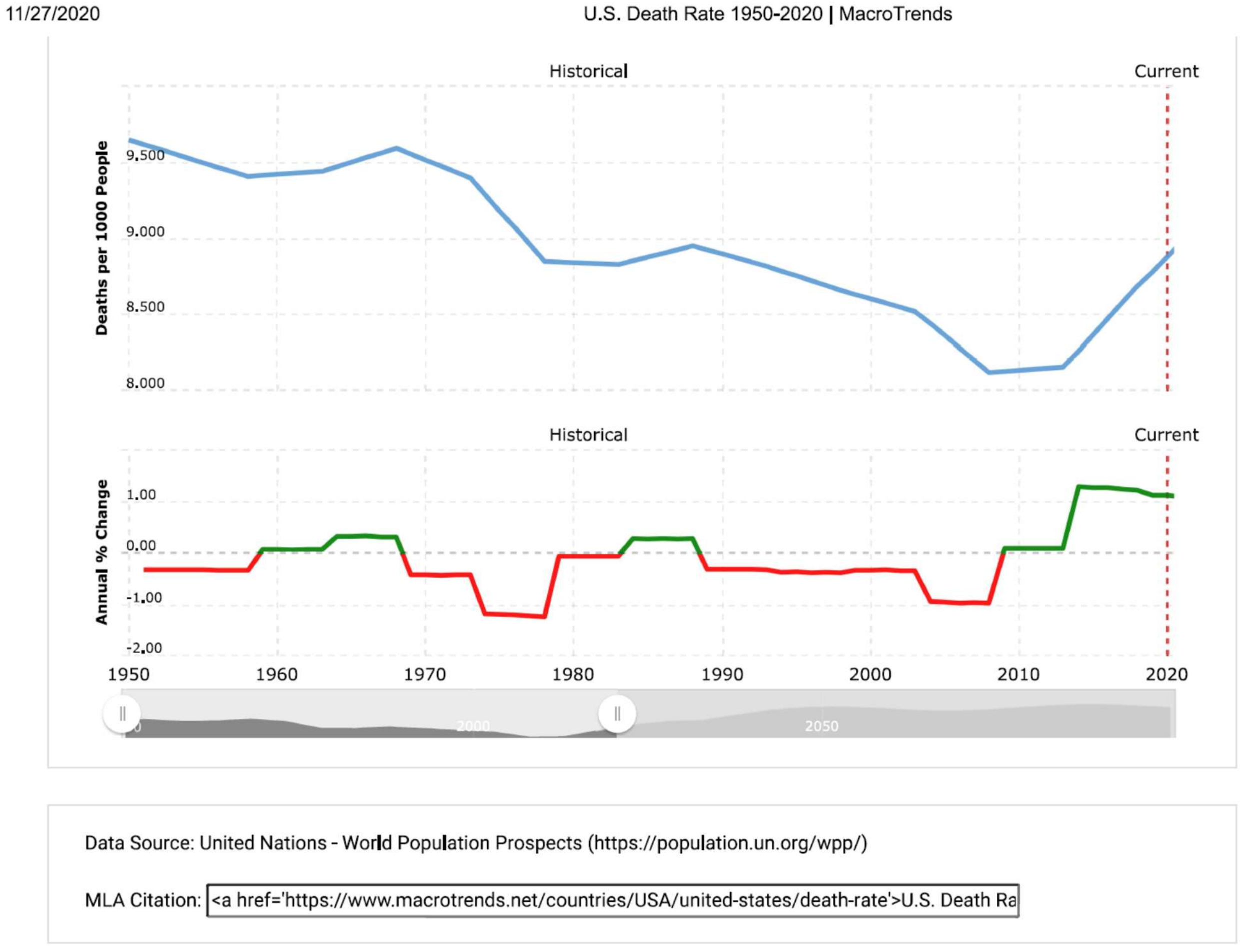


---

[470] The graph was drawn using MS-Excel, using the first and fourth columns in the aforementioned table. See [Microsoft Excel Tutorials: Create a 2D Line Chart (homeandlearn.co.uk)](https://www.homeandlearn.co.uk/excel2007/excel2007s3p11.html) https://www.homeandlearn.co.uk/excel2007/excel2007s3p11.html .

The following is based on historical data and UN projection regarding death rate in America:[471]

Figure 3.



Data Source: United Nations - World Population Prospects (https://population.un.org/wpp/)

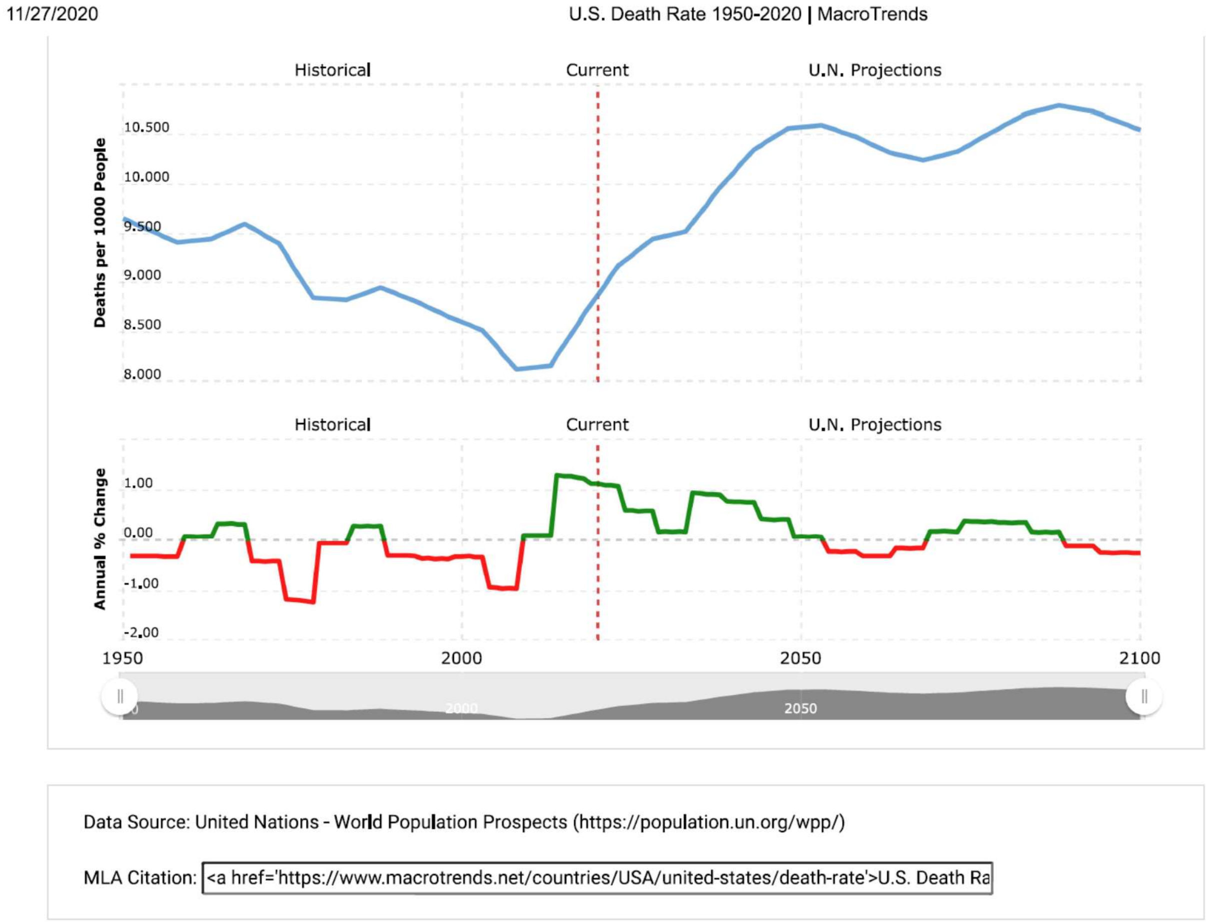
MLA Citation: <a href='https://www.macrotrends.net/countries/USA/united-states/death-rate'>U.S. Death Ra

---

[471] See [U.S. Death Rate 1950-2020 | MacroTrends](https://www.macrotrends.net/countries/USA/united-states/death-rate) https://www.macrotrends.net/countries/USA/united-states/death-rate .

And the next one includes longer projection for the future death rate, which perhaps may be overly speculative:

Figure 4.



11/27/2020 U.S. Death Rate 1950-2020 | MacroTrends

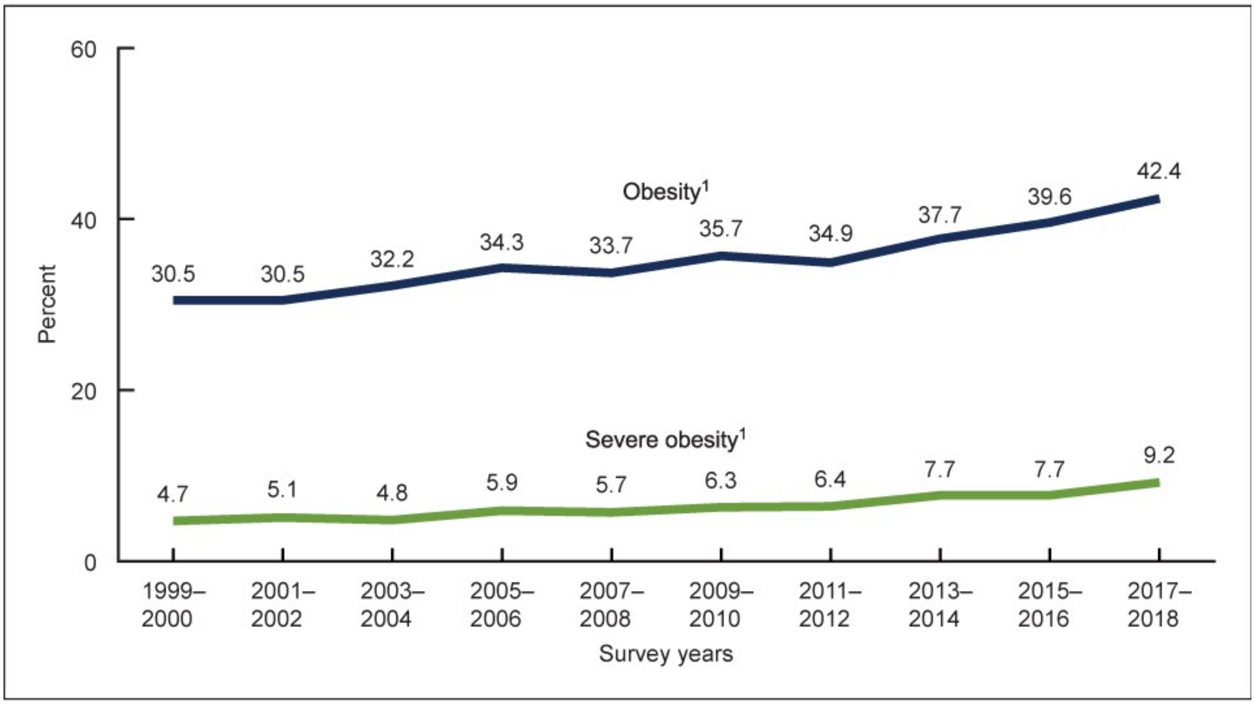
Data Source: United Nations - World Population Prospects (https://population.un.org/wpp/)

MLA Citation: <a href='https://www.macrotrends.net/countries/USA/united-states/death-rate'>U.S. Death Ra

And lastly, the following two graphs are CDC data regarding annual trend of obesity in America in adults and in adolescents:[472]

Figure 5.

Figure 4. Trends in age-adjusted obesity and severe obesity prevalence among adults aged 20 and over: United States, 1999–2000 through 2017–2018

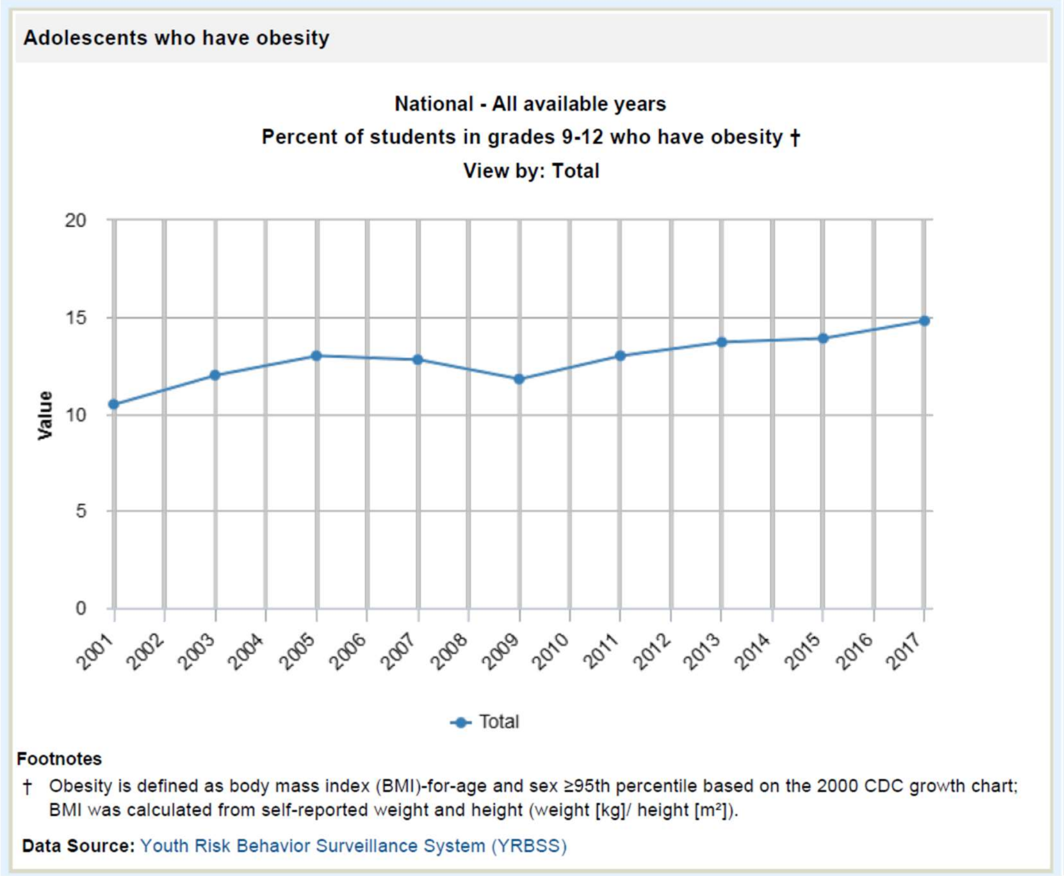


[1]Significant linear trend.
NOTES: Estimates were age adjusted by the direct method to the 2000 U.S. Census population using the age groups 20–39, 40–59, and 60 and over. Access data table for Figure 4 at: https://www.cdc.gov/nchs/data/databriefs/db360_tables-508.pdf#4.
SOURCE: NCHS, National Health and Nutrition Examination Survey, 1999–2018.

---

[472] See Products - Data Briefs - Number 360 - February 2020 (cdc.gov) https://www.cdc.gov/nchs/products/databriefs/db360.htm ; DNPAO Data, Trends and Maps: Explore by Location | CDC https://nccd.cdc.gov/dnpao_dtm/rdPage.aspx?rdReport=DNPAO_DTM.ExploreByLocation&rdRequestForwarding=Form .

Figure 6.



Adolescents who have obesity

National - All available years

Percent of students in grades 9-12 who have obesity †

View by: Total

Value
20
15
10
5
0
2001
2002
2003
2004
2005
2006
2007
2008
2009
2010
2011
2012
2013
2014
2015
2016
2017
Total

Footnotes

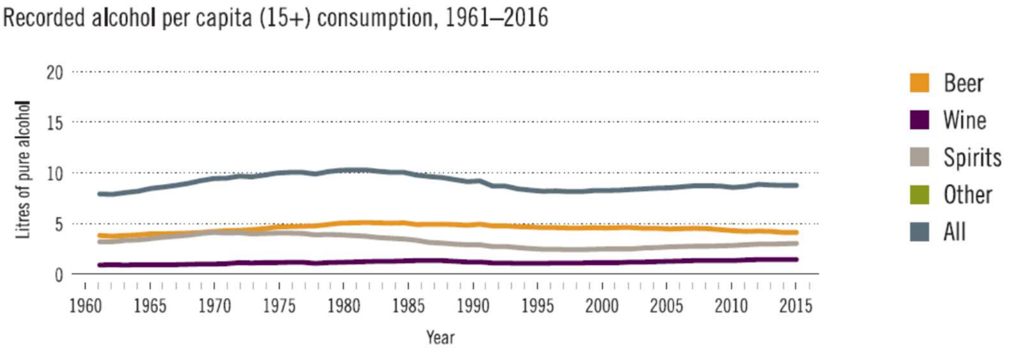
† Obesity is defined as body mass index (BMI)-for-age and sex ≥95th percentile based on the 2000 CDC growth chart; BMI was calculated from self-reported weight and height (weight [kg]/ height [m²]).

Data Source: Youth Risk Behavior Surveillance System (YRBSS)

3. Some More Interesting Stats

It seems the consumption of alcohol in America is slightly increasing or mostly even:[473]

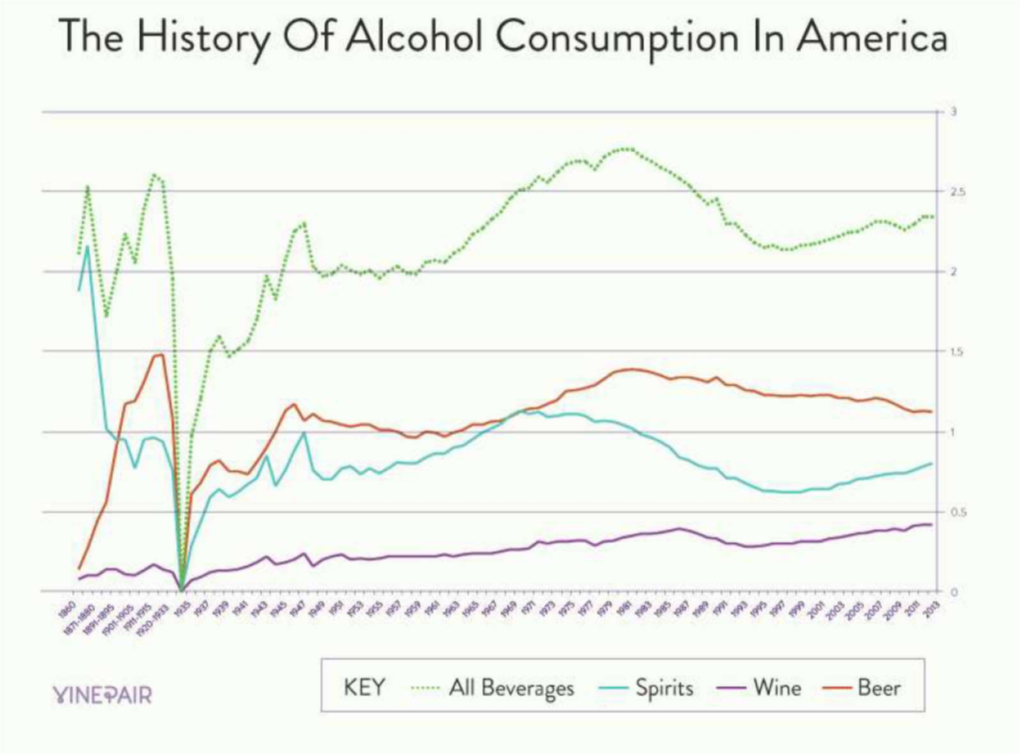
Figure 7.



---

[473] See [America's Consumption of Alcohol Over Time Since 1860 [Charts] | VinePair](https://vinepair.com/articles/americas-consumption-beer-wine-spirits-since/) https://vinepair.com/articles/americas-consumption-beer-wine-spirits-since/ ; [19089_United States of America.pdf (who.int)](https://www.who.int/substance_abuse/publications/global_alcohol_report/profiles/usa.pdf) https://www.who.int/substance_abuse/publications/global_alcohol_report/profiles/usa.pdf
.

Figure 8.



U.S. consumption of wine, beer, and spirits in gallons per capita

Meanwhile, cigarette smoking in America has been decreasing:[474]

Figure 9.

11/28/2020 1 Epidemiology of Tobacco Use: History and Current Trends | Ending the Tobacco Problem: A Blueprint for the Nation | The National Ac…

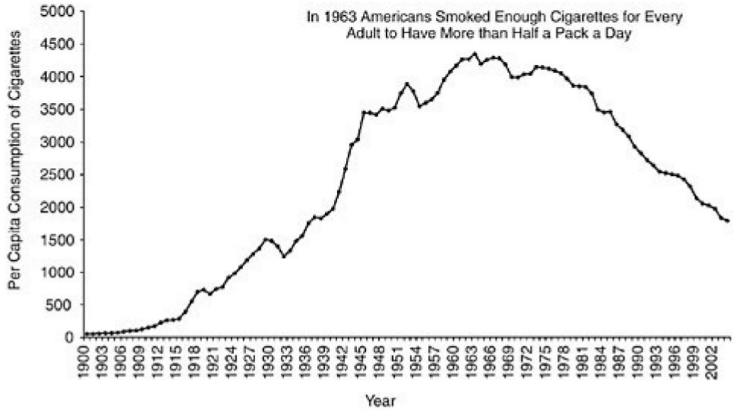


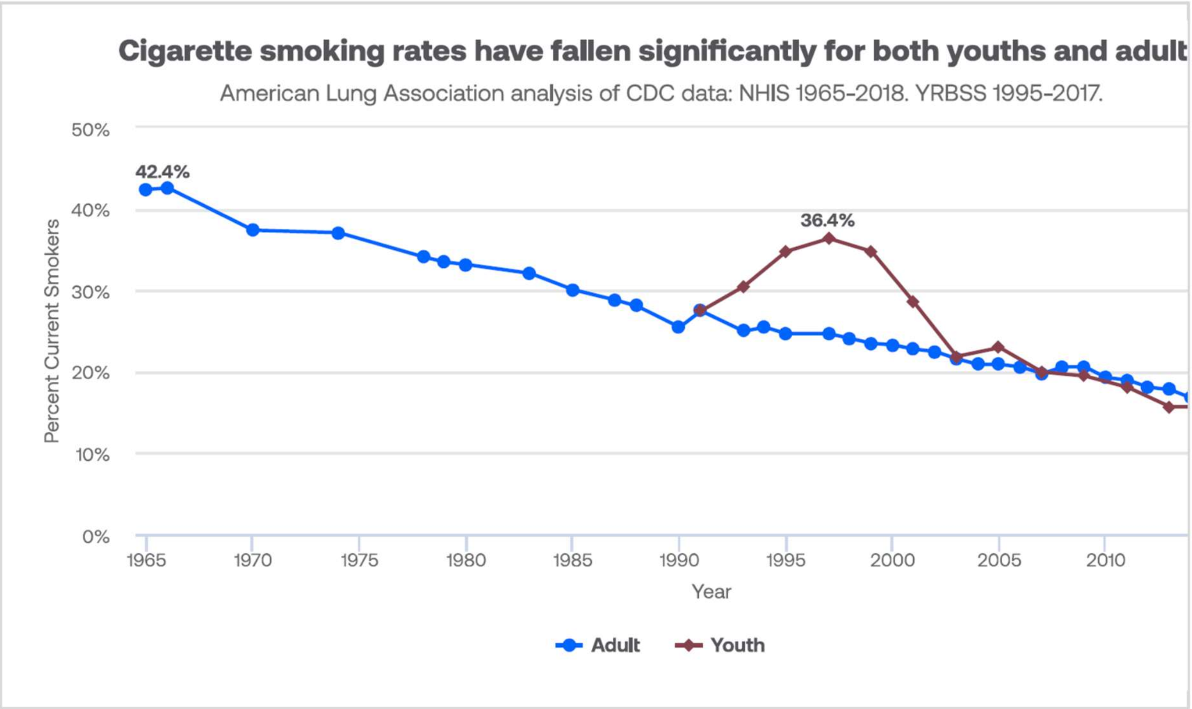
FIGURE 1-1 Per capita consumption of cigarettes among adults ages 18 years and older from 1900 to 2004. SOURCES: (ALA 2004, 2006; Capehart 2004).

---

[474] See 1 Epidemiology of Tobacco Use: History and Current Trends | Ending the Tobacco Problem: A Blueprint for the Nation | The National Academies Press (nap.edu) https://www.nap.edu/read/11795/chapter/4#42 ; Tobacco Trends Brief | American Lung Association https://www.lung.org/research/trends-in-lung-disease/tobacco-trends-brief/overall-tobacco-trends .

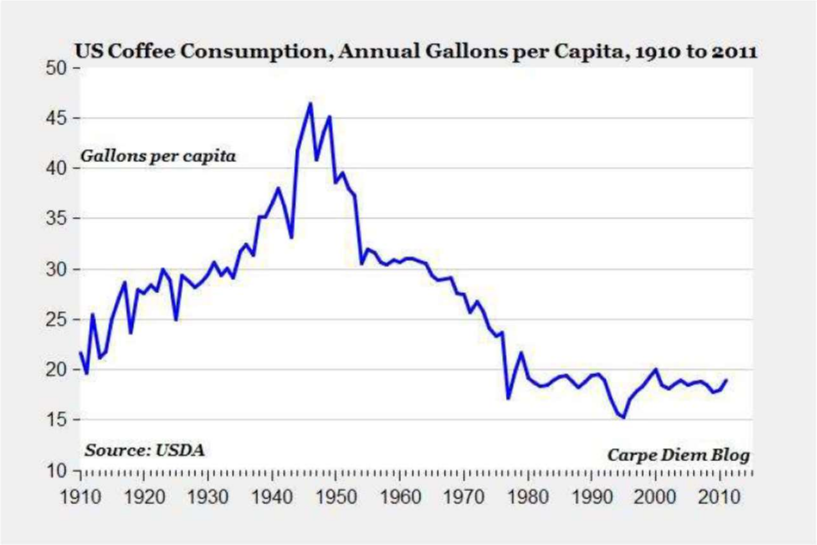
Figure 10.

11/28/2020 Tobacco Trends Brief | American Lung Association



And American's coffee consumption had decreased and then stayed even:[475]

Figure 11.



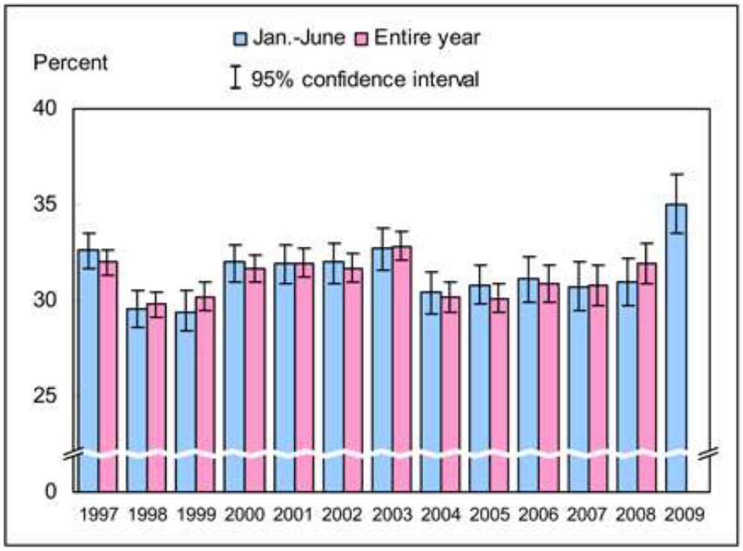
---

[475] See U.S. Coffee Consumption Has Dropped More Than 50% In 70 Years (outsidethebeltway.com) https://www.outsidethebeltway.com/u-s-coffee-consumption-had-dropped-more-than-50-in-70-years/ .

American’s exercise level seems to be even or slightly have increased:[476]

Figure 12.

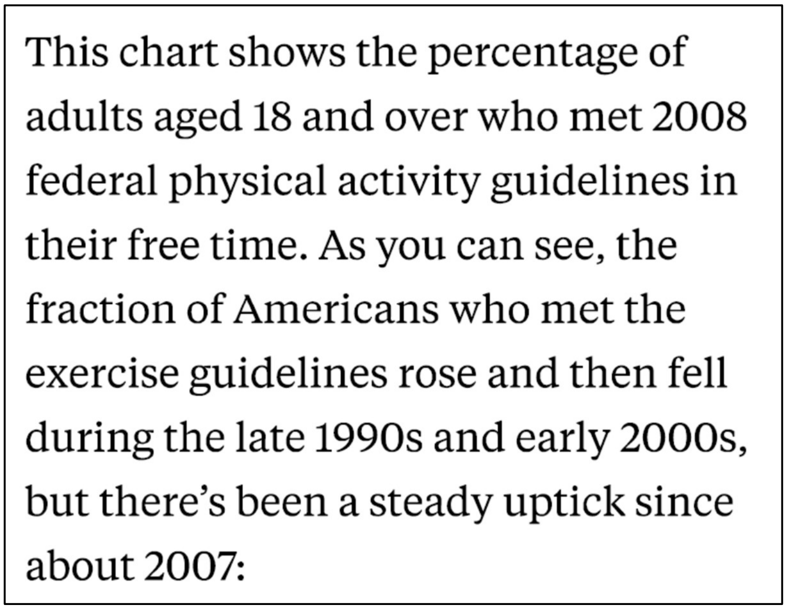
Percentage of adults aged 18 years and over who engaged in regular leisure-time physical activity: United States, 1997-June 2009 (Data from the National Health Interviewy Survey):



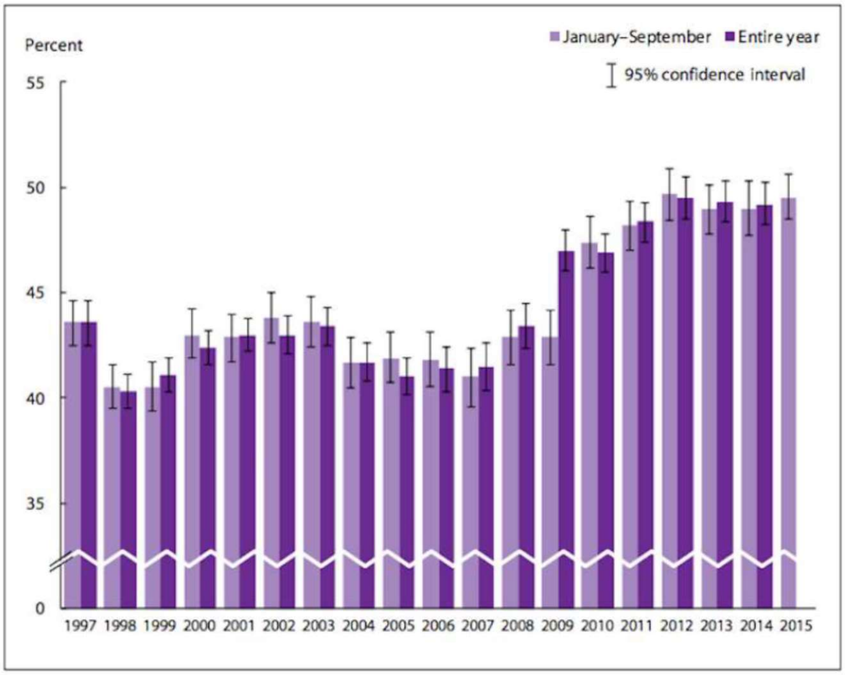
---

[476] See [National Center for Health Statistics | NCHStats](https://nchstats.com/category/national-center-for-health-statistics/) https://nchstats.com/category/national-center-for-health-statistics/ ; [A new report reveals how many Americans are getting enough exercise | Business Insider](https://www.businessinsider.com.au/cdc-report-on-exercise-trends-2016-2) https://www.businessinsider.com.au/cdc-report-on-exercise-trends-2016-2 .

Figure 13.

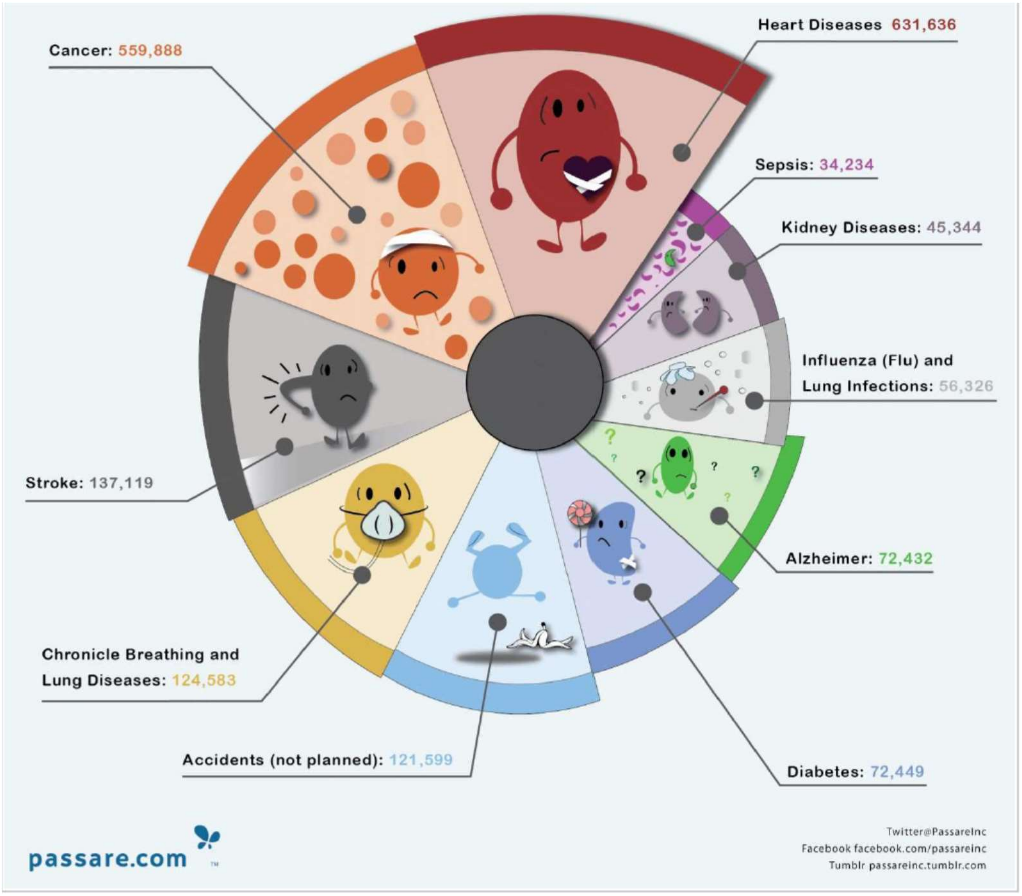


This chart shows the percentage of adults aged 18 and over who met 2008 federal physical activity guidelines in their free time. As you can see, the fraction of Americans who met the exercise guidelines rose and then fell during the late 1990s and early 2000s, but there's been a steady uptick since about 2007:



The following chart shows top 10 causes of deaths in America:[477]

Figure 14.



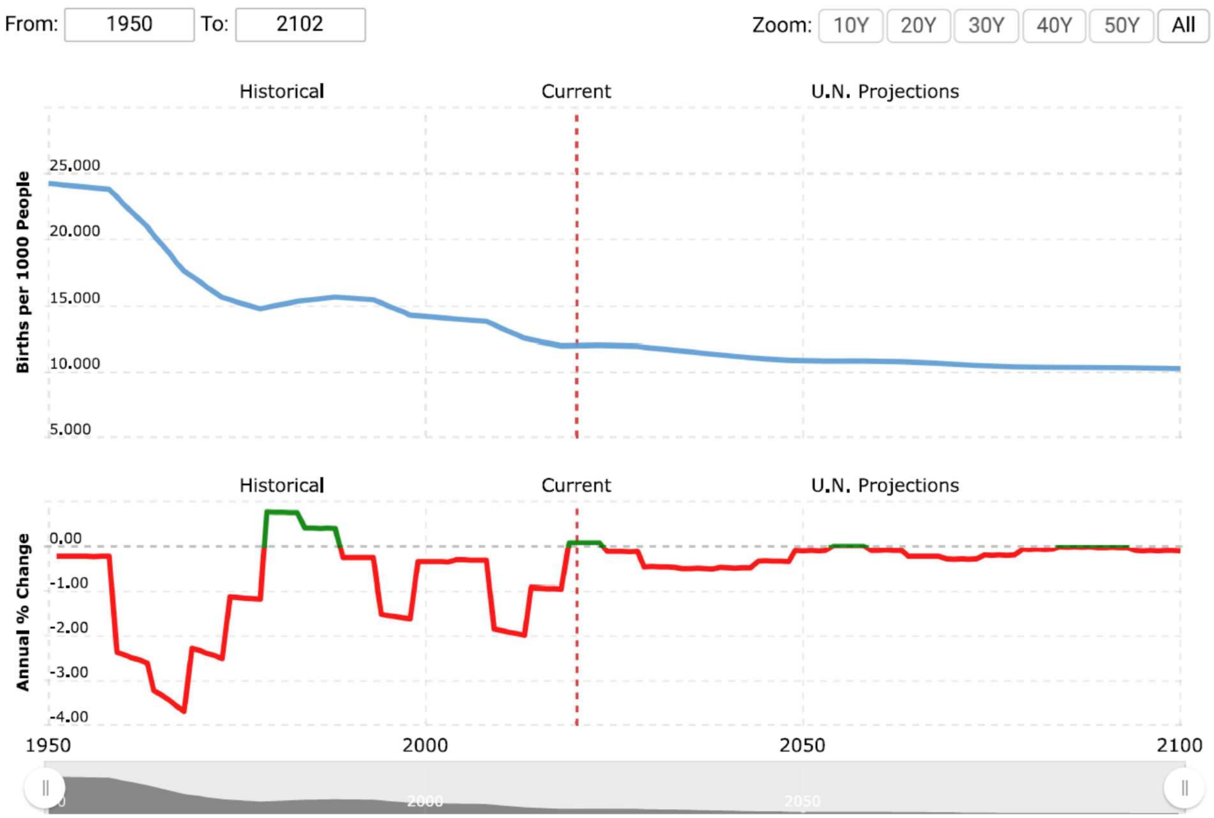
Credit: Top 10 Causes of Death in the USA by visual.ly

---

[477] See Are You at Risk? Top 10 Causes of Deaths in the USA (naturalon.com) https://naturalon.com/are-you-at-risk-top-10-causes-of-deaths-in-the-usa/ .

Next, the birth rate in America has been decreasing:[478]

Figure 15.

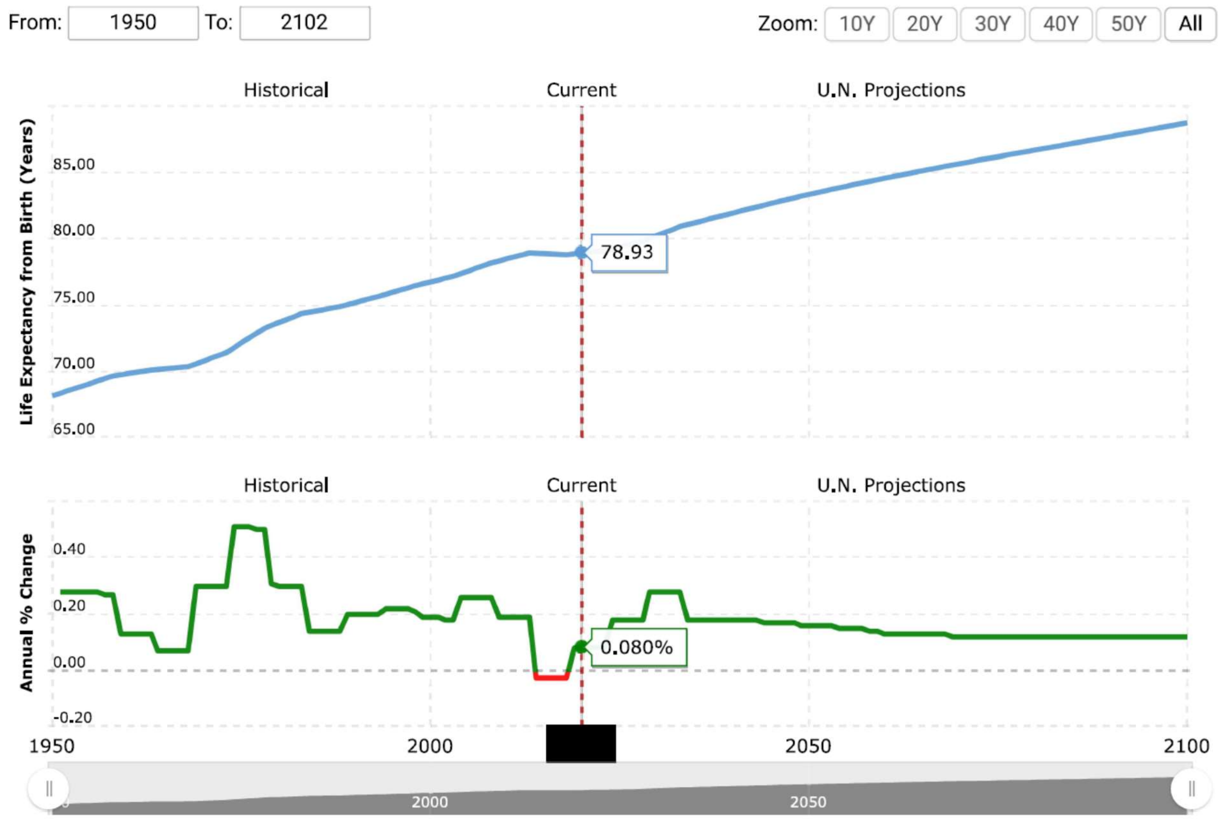


---

[478] See U.S. Birth Rate 1950-2020 | MacroTrends https://www.macrotrends.net/countries/USA/united-states/birth-rate .

Lastly, life expectancy in America has been increasing:[479]

Figure 16.



---

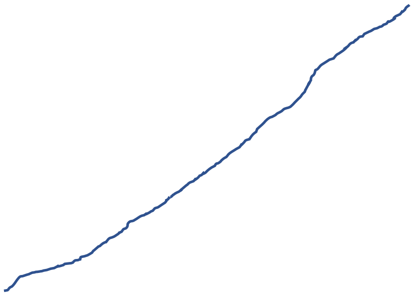
[479] See U.S. Life Expectancy 1950-2020 | MacroTrends https://www.macrotrends.net/countries/USA/united-states/life-expectancy .

V. Interpretation of Data[480]

1. A Preliminary: Statistical Fluctuation

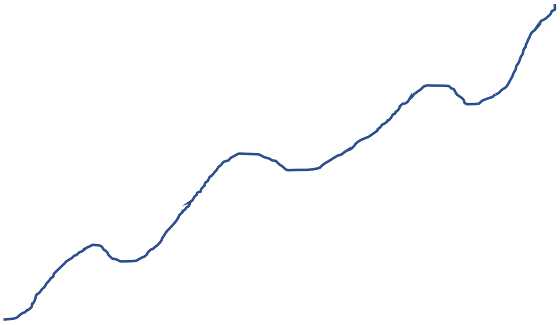
In statistics, an increasing trend typically does not look like:

Figure 17.



But an increasing trend rather looks like:

Figure 18.



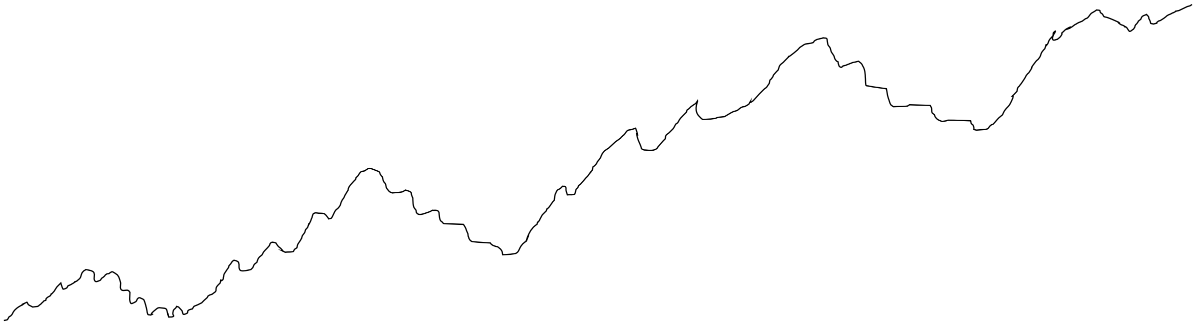
---

[480] The author owes the readers an apology if he has not been objective in this paper so far. Alas, the author is only a human who happens to be a Christian Republican conservativist, mostly. But he promises that from this point on in this paper, he will do his best to stay objective and neutral and scientific, as opposed to be ideologically influenced //!-) Also, ideo-analysis and 'interpretation of data' are intended puns of psychoanalysis and 'interpretation of dream' coined by Dr. Sigmund Freud, though the author does not subscribe to Freudism.

In other words, a trend, whether increasing or decreasing one, go through minor fluctuation like an ocean wave.[481]

But if we look closely an increasing curve with fluctuation, we can see self-similarity pattern as in fractal geometry:[482]

Figure 19.



Mathematically, we can say that Figure 17 has 0-degree fluctuation; Figure 18 has 1st degree fluctuation; Figure 19 has the fluctuation of the 2nd degree.

---

[481] See Statistical fluctuations - Wikipedia https://en.wikipedia.org/wiki/Statistical_fluctuations .

[482] See Self-similarity - Wikipedia https://en.wikipedia.org/wiki/Self-similarity .

Now, let's make a small application to the principle. Let's say, in an isolated island, there were 100 people at the beginning of the year 2018. Every year on average, 10 people die of natural causes and assume there are 10 births each year in the island, for simplicity. Then, without any pandemic, the yearly population at the beginning of each year will look like this:

Year	Population = Previous Population + # Population Change	# Death	# Birth	# Population Change = # Birth – # Death
2018	100	10	10	0
2019	100	10	10	0
2020	100	10	10	0
2021	90	10	10	0
2022	100	10	10	0
2023	100	10	10	0

Next, let's assume that at the beginning of the year, a pandemic, such as Covid-19, hits the island, caused by viruses that some seagulls carried to the island. Then, one possibility would be as follows:

Year	Population = Previous Population + # Population Change	# Death	# Birth	# Population Change = # Birth – # Death
2018	100	10	10	0
2019	100	10	10	0
2020	100	20	10	-10
2021	90	0	10	+10
2022	100	10	10	0
2023	100	10	10	0

During the year 2020, 20 people died, instead of 10 people, due to the pandemic. What happened in the scenario is that 10 people would have died in year 2020 regardless of the pandemic of year 2020. But, 10 more people died in year 2020, and those are the people who would have died in year 2021. But, the pandemic of year 2020 expedited, speeded up their death by a year or by months. That's why no one died in year 2021, because the ten people who would have died in year 2021 but for the pandemic, died in year 2020.

In this particular hypothetical scenario, what the pandemic of the year 2020 caused was nothing but a statistical fluctuation in the fifth column in the second table above. Instead of the numbers of population change being all zeros, there was -10 and +10 fluctuation for two years, on a temporary basis in grand scheme of things. We are not saying this is what will turn out to be in the case of Covid-19, but we are saying it is a logical possibility. Is it fair to say? //!-)

2. Birth Rate, Life Expectancy, and Death Rate

The author apologizes for bringing the grim subject of death,[483] but our goal is to prevent death.[484] To solve a problem, we first need to understand the problem.

We have seen American statistical trends about coffee consumption and cigarette smoking decreasing; exercise, alcohol consumption, and obesity slightly increasing. It is difficult to say that such tendency is related with increasing death rate in America.

We have seen from Figures 1 to 4, that since the year 2009, American death rate has been increasing. Death rate is roughly defined as the percentage of a population who die in a given year.

In the first blue curve in Figure 3, we can see 1st degree fluctuation of an overall decreasing curve. Then, the upward trend in the latter half of the blue curve in Figure 2 may possibly be a local upward fluctuation, being just a small part of a bigger global curve in Figure 3, which is going downward in the big schema of things. In other words, we need to see the big picture.

Alternatively, it is also possible, as UN projected in Figure 4, that American death rate is increasing even seen from a high-flying bird's point of view. The thing is, the future is not fixed, so we can prevent death by policy change or promotion of healthy lifestyle.

Now, Figure 15 – 16 show us that American birth rate is decreasing and American life expectancy is increasing. It means American demographics is shifting toward more aged population, which means, American average age is getting older year after year. This may explain why American death rate is increasing.

Well, we're not being exact here, as we are not concerning ourselves with exact time window matching, like year by year comparison. What we're doing here is a brain exercise in statistical analysis.

So, to make it easier to see, we can conduct a coordinate transformation,[485] from a one-dimensional temporal coordinate of the yearly time line, to a binary spatial coordinate consisting of two islands.

Let's say, there are two Islands, A and B. In Island A, 100 people reside and they're all young. In island B, 100 people live there and they're all old. Then, in a given year, which island will score more deaths? Island B.

---

[483] See Death - Wikipedia https://en.wikipedia.org/wiki/Death .

[484] See 11 Top Bible Verses About Eternal Life - Encouraging Scripture (biblestudytools.com) https://www.biblestudytools.com/topical-verses/eternal-life-bible-verses/ .

[485] See List of common coordinate transformations - Wikipedia https://en.wikipedia.org/wiki/List_of_common_coordinate_transformations .

Let's say, a country's average age is increasing, because the country people are making less babies and the country people are living longer and longer. Then it is a natural and logical consequence that the death rate would increase. But wouldn't it be also true that less and less people would die if people live longer and longer? Well, the thing is, no matter how long a person lives, given the current medical and other technologies, there seems to be an upper limit in human's life span, like 122 years.[486] If so, if everyone in a country becomes the age past 100 years, then death rate in that country will definitely increase annually. Is the upper limit of human life span increasing also? Possibly.

As we can see, statistical analysis deals with multivariate environment where there are many variables.[487] That is why it is easy to make errors in a statistical argumentation.

3. Case Study: Covid-19

So, some scientists and journalists say that about 260,000 Americans died from Covid-19 in year 2020. Figure 1 shows that in year 2018, about 2,800,000 Americans died from all causes. The question is, the 260,000 American who died with Covid-19, are they the kind of people who would have died anyway, even without Covid-19?[488] In other words, did significantly more number of Americans die in the year 2020, compared to the year 2018, ignoring the annual trend of increasing death rate?

The thing is, CDC has limited resources and they're busy people with multiple projects. So, it takes about two years for CDC to come up with a number that counts how many American died in a given year.[489]

Conservativists may characterize liberalists as Covid-19-alarmists, and liberalists may regard conservativists as Covid-19-denialists. Whether Covid-19 did indeed cause more deaths in America, we may have to wait 2 more years until CDC compiles death statistics for the year 2020.

But, we can still conduct logical analysis of the situation at this time.

---

[486] See Oldest people - Wikipedia https://en.wikipedia.org/wiki/Oldest_people .

[487] See Function of several real variables - Wikipedia https://en.wikipedia.org/wiki/Function_of_several_real_variables .

[488] It is logical to reason that the individuals who passed away from Covid-19 had compromised immune system, possibly due to pre-existing conditions. In other words, their immune systems somehow failed to fend off Covid-19, and such failure is most likely due to weakened immune system. Again, we're not making light of the situation, but we are trying to understand what happened during the Covid-19 event, so that we be better prepared for such in the future.

[489] See Understanding Death Data (cdc.gov) https://www.cdc.gov/surveillance/projects/understanding-death-data.html .

4. Logical Analysis of Covid-19

When the author ran for Alaska State Senate Republican Primary in August of 2020, he gave speeches and wrote 'letters to editors' style essays, expressing the following view regarding Covid-19:

> *"A human body is like a machine with pipes and electric cords or a building with air ducts and water pipes. It's all about healthy diet and regular exercises so that our body parts get the nutrients and the blood clears wastes.*
>
> *"When a human body is healthy, then the immune system is efficient and no matter what pathogens may come in, the antibody production will fend them off. Antibody is adaptive and thus is the best vaccine there can be. A pharmaceutical vaccine will work only until the next mutation of the virus comes in.*
>
> *"Ladies and gentlemen, the lifestyle healthy exercise and regular diet is the cure-all, the panacea, the silver bullet for all diseases, including Covid-19."*

Though he tried, the author failed to get elected[490] //x-D

Don't doctors and scientists and political leaders and media journalists know this? They probably do. Then how come even Dr. Anthony Fauci or President Trump never once mentioned regular exercise and healthy diet as solutions for Covid-19? There are possibilities.

First, perhaps misalignment of interests between the public and the private industries. It is to the interest of the public that people are healthy. But, if people eat less and eat healthy, that's not a good business for food industry. If everyone is healthy, there will be less sick people and less visits to hospitals. Such diminished demand for medical service will drive down the price for medical care, which will depress the price of medical service, insurance premium, and pharmaceutical products. When people are healthy, private industries will make less money.

Next, political leaders need money to run their campaigns to get elected and reelected. Where do they get the money? Via PACs and Super PACs[491], corporations can indirectly donate money to assist a candidate whose policy aligns with their financial interests.[492] Plus, when people are afraid of Covid-19, people become easier to control for the leaders.[493] As for media journalists, a sensational situation makes a fantastic business.[494] If there is a big panic going on, everyone's ears and eyes are fixated with daily, if not hourly, news.

---

[490] See Voter's Equation by Huhnkie Lee :: SSRN https://papers.ssrn.com/sol3/papers.cfm?abstract_id=3701959 . Having said that, the authors' ideas have been well received among Alaskan audience in attendance //:-)

[491] See Political action committee - Wikipedia https://en.wikipedia.org/wiki/Political_action_committee .

[492] See How much can corporations give to 2020 political campaigns? | Fox Business https://www.foxbusiness.com/money/how-much-can-corporations-give-to-2020-political-campaigns .

In sum, political leaders obtain sense of control when people are afraid, and media journalists enhance their viewership when people are afraid. Food industries make more money when people buy and eat more than healthy level. Insurance industry, pharmaceutical companies, medical industry all benefit when people are unhealthy. Then are we saying Covid-19 Pandemic is nothing but a case of a gigantic conspiracy by the Politico-Journalistico-Insuranco-Pharmaceutico-Medico-Industrial Complex?[495]

Well. We do not have a direct evidence of such a global scale conspiracy, but, what can say is that business want to make money and that's their motivation.[496] After all, people are people and we all need to pay rent, mortgage, insurance bill, electricity bill, etc. People need money to survive. But of course, we're not saying everyone always does immoral things to survive. What we are saying is, the pandemic of Covid-19 may not be what it seems on the surface. There may be ulterior motives, behind-the-scene things that motivate a, perhaps, exaggeration or a hyperbolization of the situation of the Covid-19. It's a possibility.

5. On Asymptomatic Transmission of Virus[497]

Mr. Francis Bacon[498] once said, "Knowledge is Power." A corollary might be, "Lack of knowledge is Powerlessness," also more commonly known as "Fear of the Unknown." Even people in the White House were so afraid of the corona virus, they started locking down the entire nation.[499]

---

[493] See COVID-19 pandemic lockdowns - Wikipedia https://en.wikipedia.org/wiki/COVID-19_pandemic_lockdowns ; COVID-19 pandemic - Wikipedia https://en.wikipedia.org/wiki/COVID-19_pandemic .

[494] Of course, we can't put all the blames on news people. After all, it is us, the people, who demand sensational stories, like, corona virus scare. Why do want these scary stories? To ease the boredom perhaps. Why do we watch horror flicks and ride rollercoasters? To experience virtual danger, the thrill, the adrenaline rush. This is why some conservativists say that all this Covid-19 scare is nothing but a hoax. Well, the Covid-19 may be more fatal than common flu or common cold viruses, but it may be that the danger of situation might have been exaggerated by the people's demand for an extraordinary adventure, like being in a great danger and all that drama and such. It's 'a' possibility, if not 'the' reality.

[495] See Eisenhower's Military-Industry Complex Warning, 50 Years Later : NPR https://www.npr.org/2011/01/17/132942244/ikes-warning-of-military-expansion-50-years-later .

[496] Of course, we pay tribute to medical and pharmaceutical and insurance and culinary professionals who heroically save lives of many by their dedicated service and expertise.

[497] See Asymptomatic carrier - Wikipedia https://en.wikipedia.org/wiki/Asymptomatic_carrier .

[498] See Scientia potentia est - Wikipedia https://en.wikipedia.org/wiki/Scientia_potentia_est .

[499] See Rage — Bob Woodward https://www.bobwoodward.com/books/klgkvh2ziidrzln6u9wf5ywpn1dbfg .

The emotion of fear aside, the binary model[500] of either/or might not be the best mathematical tool to model[501] the phenomenon of viral transmission. A better way to think about it might be a sliding scale between 0% to 100% of probability. Or perhaps some kind of combination between Boolean algebra and probability might be even better.

It is true that it's either a person contract corona virus or not; either a person gets sick or not. But, a person's immune system has a varying degree of strength. And the number of viruses that gets into a person can range from a single virus to multiple million viruses. We can make a Boolean function of disease contraction as follows:[502]

$$Sick(A, V) = ((A\text{'s } Immune\ Strength) < (V\text{'s } Number))$$

Basically, what the function above says is that a person A gets sick if the virus V's number overcomes the strength of A's immune system.

Let's say, Adam is a very healthy man. He does all the right things like healthy diet and regular exercise, personal hygiene. And Adam knows the importance of good sleep and good rest. He also knows the virtue of balancing work and play and rest.

And assume that, one day, some corona virus population gets into Adam's system, like, 100 corona viruses for example. Since Adam's immune system is highly efficient, 90 of the viruses die as Adam's antibody soldiers kill them. But 10 of the corona viruses manage to escape the antibodies and start living in Adam's body, and they even quietly multiply inside of Adam's body. But Adam's antibodies continue to kill a certain percentage of the corona virus population, say, 90%. Then, the corona virus population in Adam will be maintained at the level of 10 viruses. Ladies and gentlemen, Mr. Adam has just become an asymptomatic carrier.

Now, since Adam has such a small number of corona viruses in him, it is not very likely that he would transmit substantial number of corona viruses to other people from air to air. Well, if Adam has a wife and if they engage in nuptial intimacy, then the transmission of the corona viruses would be more likely than otherwise.[503]

And immune system takes a while to learn about the new brand of viruses. Once a brand new virus comes into Adam's body, immune system[504] needs to sample the surface protein of the virus. Then the immune system start manufacturing antibodies that has the three-dimensionally opposite shape of the viral protein, like in a molding,[505] so that the antibodies would bind to the viruses' surfaces, and tag it to be swallowed and destroyed by white blood cells like macrophages.[506]

---

[500] See Boolean algebra - Wikipedia https://en.wikipedia.org/wiki/Boolean_algebra ; Binary number - Wikipedia https://en.wikipedia.org/wiki/Binary_number .

[501] See Mathematical model - Wikipedia https://en.wikipedia.org/wiki/Mathematical_model .

[502] See Iverson bracket - Wikipedia https://en.wikipedia.org/wiki/Iverson_bracket .

[503] See Sexually transmitted infection - Wikipedia https://en.wikipedia.org/wiki/Sexually_transmitted_infection .

[504] See Immune response - Wikipedia https://en.wikipedia.org/wiki/Immune_response .

[505] See Molding (process) - Wikipedia https://en.wikipedia.org/wiki/Molding_(process) .

So the bottom line is, the old brand of corona virus will eventually be wiped out in Adam's body, as Adam's immune system learn more about the virus and will keep producing more and more antibodies customed to that brand of corona virus. But if corona virus mutate again, like all viruses frequently do, then Adam's body will have to go through the cycle of the protein-sampling, molding of antibody, then production of the antibodies, all over again. Believe or not, that's what's happening in an animal's body, 24/7, everyday.

Again, there is no other permanent solution to any pandemic problems, including Covid-19, other than the meritorious lifestyle consisting of healthy diet, regular exercise, personal hygiene, and the tripartite balancing act between work and play and rest.

6. On Mandatory Masking[507]

As a preliminary, let us build a 2 by 2 table[508] to describe the Covid-19 situation, using a hybrid model using Boolean binary categorization and quasi-probability:

Transmission Probability	X with Strong Immune System	-X with Weak Immune System
Y who is an Asymptomatic Carrier of Covid-19	Very Little Risk	Little Risk
-Y who has Severe Infection of Covid-19	Little Risk	Substantial Risk

---

[506] See Macrophage - Wikipedia https://en.wikipedia.org/wiki/Macrophage .

[507] In year 2020's Covid era, masking culture can be understood in analogy to the superstitious carriage of amulets or charms back in the days, in the hopes of security and safety. See https://en.wikipedia.org/wiki/Amulet . Are we masking our insecurity? Are scientists being scientific when they recommend political leaders about masking? The author holds the position that the healthy lifestyle can prevent Covid. Healthy diet, regular exercise, personal hygiene, good balance between work and play and rest constitute a healthy lifestyle. Mandatory lockdown may result in inactivity of people's bodies, which may result in weakened immune system, which may result in more Covid. Mask wearing may hinder flow of air in the body, make one's body less efficient, which may result in less efficient immune system, leading to more Covid. So called scientists or even doctors, they're too busy to think things through sometimes. Scientists are no more than human beings who are subject to ideological influence. Scientists tend to say what's the most popular things to say in the era they live in. Why? Because scientists need to bring money to the table so they feed their kids, cats, dogs, spouses, they need pay mortgage, car loan, insurance bills, and other bills. We cannot trust scientists just because they got PhDs, because scientists are no saints or prophets from God. Scientists are only human. They're humans no better than us.

[508] See Truth table - Wikipedia https://en.wikipedia.org/wiki/Truth_table ; Truth Tables | Brilliant Math & Science Wiki https://brilliant.org/wiki/truth-tables/ .

As we have examined before, if a person Y has corona virus in him but he is asymptomatic, it means Y's strong immune system is keeping the corona virus population in him in check. So unless Y is being physically intimate with X, like with hugs and kisses, it is unlikely that Y would pass substantial number of corona virus to X. Even if some of Y's corona virus gets into X's body, the number of such viruses will be small, because Y's body does not have that many corona viruses in the first place, and that's why Y is asymptomatic.

In the future, historians may say Mr. President Trump's biggest mistake was to have taken the White House doctors' recommendation and ordered the national shutdown. Many business establishments and political leaders mandated mask wearing in indoor public places. Mandatory lockdown and masking policy may have slowed down the spread of the corona virus so that hospital capacity would not get overwhelmed. It may have worked. Can we ever know? Not scientifically. Why? It's because we do not have a time machine. We can't go back to the past and experiment with an alternative America where there was no lockdown or masking mandate, and then compare the death toll between two Americas, one with Covid mandate and one without Covid mandate. So, it's an unfalsifiable situation.[509]

There are two traditionally American values: equality[510] and freedom[511]. They're found in state and federal Constitutions, the Declaration of Independence, National Anthem, and Pledge of Allegiance. When a political policy goes against either of the two values, probably it won't work very well, because such a policy goes against American culture deeply ingrained in American's hearts and souls.

Are there some scientific or logical arguments to be made against masking and lockdown mandates? To be a balanced and independent thinker, let us explore some counterintuitive possibilities.[512]

First, a mask gets in the way of breathing. Without exhaling carbon dioxides and inhaling oxygens well, a body's efficiency will degrade. Second, mask wearing is inconvenient and may reduce labor efficiency at work or school setting. Third, masks may harbor and provide a spawning ground for bacteria, fungi, even viruses.

Fourth, masking hide people's pretty faces and may decrease general happiness level of the population. In this paper, we examined that mandatory hijab wearing may be the cause of Middle Eastern violence. When people's natural beauty is hidden by masks, then people will be less happy, as there're less eye-candies in the world, which may cause violence. This correlation possibility of diminished human happiness and increased violence will be further explored in the next chapter as well.

---

[509] See Falsifiability - Wikipedia https://en.wikipedia.org/wiki/Falsifiability .

[510] The federal guideline of essential and nonessential businesses can be seen as a discrimination case. See Essential vs. Nonessential Businesses | Justia https://www.justia.com/covid-19/business-assistance-during-the-coronavirus-pandemic/essential-vs-nonessential-businesses/ ; Equality before the law - Wikipedia https://en.wikipedia.org/wiki/Equality_before_the_law .

[511] The author, like some others, takes the position that nothing should have been mandatory in public policy level during the Covid-19 days. See Libertarianism - Wikipedia https://en.wikipedia.org/wiki/Libertarianism .

[512] See Devil's advocate - Wikipedia https://en.wikipedia.org/wiki/Devil%27s_advocate ; Polemic - Wikipedia https://en.wikipedia.org/wiki/Polemic .

7. On Covid-19 Testing

In post-Covid era, President Trump and many governors of states have based their policy decision making on medical professionals and some, including this author, argue that such was a mistake. Medical professionals are not sociologists or economists or politicians. Medical professionals, rightfully so, take it as their mission to save lives. But, in politics, there are other concerns. A good political leader should listen to everyone, not just doctors with a medical tunnel vision.

It is conceded that a person who comes to a hospital with severe symptoms matching Covid-19 should get tested for it, in order to diagnose and then customize the treatment according to the identity of the disease. But, if a person has mere mild symptoms or even no symptoms whatsoever, then, some of us think that Covid testing on such a person would bring more harm than good, because it creates unnecessary, even deleterious panic, if tested positive.

The propagation of viruses is roughly like molecular diffusion.[513] Typically, a biological species' population growth takes the pattern of exponential growth.[514] It is understandable that people are afraid of death.[515] Fear of death is an evolutionary response common to all animal species with nervous system.[516]

President Trump may not have been able to articulate the situation very well, but he was partially correct when he said in interviews that there're more Covid cases because there're whole a lot of Covid testing going on in America.[517] Some, including the author, think that Covid over-testing created unnecessary pandemic of germaphobia.[518]

---

[513] See Diffusion - Wikipedia https://en.wikipedia.org/wiki/Diffusion .

[514] See Exponential growth - Wikipedia https://en.wikipedia.org/wiki/Exponential_growth . But the author, like many conservatives, takes the position that most Covid-positive cases are harmless, and that Covid-alarmism may do more harm than good, and that mandatory lockdown/masking policies may do more harm than good, and that Covid-testing may do more harm than good.

[515] See Fear - Wikipedia https://en.wikipedia.org/wiki/Fear .

[516] See Fight-or-flight response - Wikipedia https://en.wikipedia.org/wiki/Fight-or-flight_response .

[517] See Trump Falsely Says COVID-19 Surge 'Only' Due to Testing, Misleads on Deaths - FactCheck.org https://www.factcheck.org/2020/06/trump-falsely-says-covid-19-surge-only-due-to-testing-misleads-on-deaths/ ; Trump said Covid-19 testing 'creates more cases.' We did the math - STAT (statnews.com) https://www.statnews.com/2020/07/20/trump-said-more-covid19-testing-creates-more-cases-we-did-the-math/ ; Fact check: Trump blames testing for spike in COVID-19 cases. Experts fault reopening of states. (nbcnews.com) https://www.nbcnews.com/politics/donald-trump/fact-check-trump-blames-testing-spike-covid-19-cases-experts-n1228671 .

[518] One question is, is Covid-19 testing sensitive and accurate enough to distinguish between common cold virus (rhinovirus) and corona virus; between common flue virus (influenza virus) and corona virus? Maybe, maybe not. If not, then this whole Covid-19 thing may turn out to be a panic, not a pandemic. It is a possibility, if not probability. Let us intellectually explore all possibilities, as a brain muscle exercise, if not pursuit of the truth //:-)

What happened next in the post-Covid year 2020 is that people were ordered to stay at home and economy partially shut down. A nation's economy is very much like an animal's body. An animal's body is healthy when blood efficiently circulates to deliver nutrients and to remove wastes. Likewise, a nation's economy is healthy when people work to produce things and buy things to live. Economic shutdown causes stagnation in the economy's circulation of money. Mandatory staying at home also decreases the physical activity of people and may create blood clots.[519] Blood in a body, money in economy, same thing.

8. On Origin of Covid-19

President Trump was relatively quick to blame China for corona virus situation and often referred to it as "China Virus,"[520] and also created a pejorative term, "Kung Flu,"[521] roughly referring to the traditional Chinese martial art form known as Kung Fu.[522] Though some may decide to appreciate the President's corky and crude sense of humor, others may think that such finger-pointing behaviorism may not so conducive to solving a problem. For instance, when AIDS came out of San Francisco in an obscure LGBT community, no foreign countries call it an "American Virus" or "LGBT Virus".[523]

They say, Covid-19[524] started in a, so called Chinese wet market, where they buy, sell, and eat hunted wild animals.[525] One constructive recommendation for China would be farming of wild animals, as opposed to harvesting or even poaching them. China has more than enough labor, capital, and technology so as to farm any wild animals in the world. Farmed animals never go extinct, because people ensure their eternal reproduction for the sake of agriculture. How about China adopts a policy such that they farm wild animals for whatever purposes, and release 10% of them to the animals' natural habitats? By farming wild animals and fully cook them, Chinese people can ensure the sanitary condition and prevent some animal viruses jumping to humans. Alternatively, would it be too much to ask Chinese citizens that they stop eating strange animals?[526]

---

[519] See Thrombus - Wikipedia https://en.wikipedia.org/wiki/Thrombus .

[520] See Call it 'China virus', coronavirus sounds like a 'beautiful place' in Italy, says Donald Trump (msn.com) https://www.msn.com/en-in/news/world/call-it-china-virus-coronavirus-sounds-like-a-beautiful-place-in-italy-says-donald-trump/ar-BB19kweG ; Trump criticized for calling coronavirus "Chinese virus" - CBS News https://www.cbsnews.com/news/president-trump-coronavirus-chinese-virus-backlash/ ; Trump unapologetically uses phrase 'Chinese Virus' as clash escalates with China over its origins | Fox News https://www.foxnews.com/politics/gloves-off-over-coronavirus-trump-administration-china-escalate-clash-over-origins . Of course, critiques aside, we do acknowledge Prez Trump's leadership and positive role model-ship when he said, "Do not be afraid of corona virus", after he tested positive, he overcame and got healthy again //:-) See Trump says "don't be afraid of COVID" as death toll nears 210,000 - CBS News https://www.cbsnews.com/news/trump-covid-19-dont-be-afraid-death-toll-210000/ ; 'Don't be afraid' of COVID, Trump says as he returns to White House that is stalked by illness | Reuters https://www.reuters.com/article/health-coronavirus-trump-idINKBN26Q0CU .

[521] See Trump says 'Kung Flu' is one of the names for COVID-19 at his rally in Tulsa (msn.com) https://www.msn.com/en-us/news/politics/trump-says-kung-flu-is-one-of-the-names-for-covid-19-at-his-rally-in-tulsa/ar-BB15LRNE ; Donald Trump calls Covid-19 'kung flu' at Tulsa rally | US news | The Guardian https://www.theguardian.com/us-news/2020/jun/20/trump-covid-19-kung-flu-racist-language .

[522] See Kung fu (term) - Wikipedia https://en.wikipedia.org/wiki/Kung_fu_(term) .

[523] See HIV/AIDS - Wikipedia https://en.wikipedia.org/wiki/HIV/AIDS .

[524] See Coronavirus - Wikipedia https://en.wikipedia.org/wiki/Coronavirus ; Coronavirus disease 2019 - Wikipedia https://en.wikipedia.org/wiki/Coronavirus_disease_2019 ; COVID-19 pandemic - Wikipedia https://en.wikipedia.org/wiki/COVID-19_pandemic .

[525] See World Health Organisation's recognition of traditional Chinese medicine 'could push species into extinction' | The Independent | The Independent https://www.independent.co.uk/news/health/china-medicine-wildlife-

Of course, viruses mutate and we can't prevent that. Mutation is a natural phenomenon common to all biological species and good kinds of mutation actually are actually what drives evolution of a species forward.[527]

It may true that corona virus started in China, which is also a country of the fantastic martial art of Kung Fu. Then can we conclude that even martial arts are powerless in fending off viruses? Well, the author has never been to China and it is not known how many Chinese citizens in the big, modern city of Wuhan practiced martial arts or any other forms of exercises. But it may be that eating strange animals might be just too dangerous a practice. Even a famed, legendary Chinese martial arts master died from taking a poisoned dinner.[528]

Nevertheless, the author recommends everyone to learn martial arts,[529] as they strengthen body and mind and spirit //:-)

---

poaching-conservation-world-health-organisation-a8933061.html ; Animal poaching for traditional Chinese medicine threatens key species - The Science Show - ABC Radio National https://www.abc.net.au/radionational/programs/scienceshow/animal-poaching-for-traditional-chinese-medicine-threatens-key/10572568 ; Traditional Chinese medicine - Wikipedia https://en.wikipedia.org/wiki/Traditional_Chinese_medicine .

[526] See 22 Bible verses about Unclean Animals (knowing-jesus.com) https://bible.knowing-jesus.com/topics/Unclean-Animals .

[527] See Evolution - Wikipedia https://en.wikipedia.org/wiki/Evolution ; Mutation - Wikipedia https://en.wikipedia.org/wiki/Mutation .

[528] See Huo Yuanjia - Wikipedia https://en.wikipedia.org/wiki/Huo_Yuanjia ; Fist of Fury - Wikipedia https://en.wikipedia.org/wiki/Fist_of_Fury ; https://en.wikipedia.org/wiki/Fist_of_Legend .

[529] See Carl Douglas - Kung Fu Fighting Lyrics | AZLyrics.com https://www.azlyrics.com/lyrics/carldouglas/kungfufighting.html .

VI. The Case of BLM-ism[530]

1. Historical Backdrop

A. Indentured Servitude[531]

Back in the days for thousands of years ago, almost anywhere in the world, the class hierarchy was fixed, static and inherited. Upward class mobility[532] is a relatively very new development in human history. Back in the West (Europe), the East (Asia), the Middle East, Africa, South America, and Pacific Islands, there were upper classes like dynasties, kings, and then there were lower classes who actually worked and did useful things like providing goods and services. The lower classes were merchants or servants or mechanics or anyone who provided, in contemporary terms, essential services.

In those past eras, if a boy is born into a noble family, then he is noble for his life and his children will be noble too. If a boy is born into a servant family, then he's a servant and so will be his children. This class system was ubiquitous and universal on planet earth. Bonded servitude has absolutely nothing to do with race. In the past, Caucasians enslaved Caucasians, Asians enslaved Asians, Africans enslaved Africans.

B. Labor Exploitation[533]

During 1600s 1700s and 1800s, some European countries enjoyed the new development in science and engineering. Their ships could travel to distant continents and they had bombs and guns too. So they started conquering and colonizing some parts of Asia, India, Africa, Australia, and North/South Americas.[534]

During the industrial revolution era of 1700s and 1800s,[535] big machines and steam engines and factories were introduced and capitalists (employers) needed a lot of employees, and there were all European Caucasians, mostly. And some, if not all, industrialists exploited the labor of working-class people by demanding long work hours, poor safety protocols, and low wages.

---

[530] See Black Lives Matter - Wikipedia https://en.wikipedia.org/wiki/Black_Lives_Matter . In this paper, we'll keep the discussion rational, as opposed to emotional, because this paper is supposed to be an academic research paper, not an ideological propaganda manifesto //!-)

[531] See Indentured servitude - Wikipedia https://en.wikipedia.org/wiki/Indentured_servitude .

[532] See Social mobility - Wikipedia https://en.wikipedia.org/wiki/Social_mobility ; Socioeconomic mobility in the United States - Wikipedia https://en.wikipedia.org/wiki/Socioeconomic_mobility_in_the_United_States .

[533] See Exploitation of labour - Wikipedia https://en.wikipedia.org/wiki/Exploitation_of_labour .

[534] See History of colonialism - Wikipedia https://en.wikipedia.org/wiki/History_of_colonialism ; European colonization of the Americas - Wikipedia https://en.wikipedia.org/wiki/European_colonization_of_the_Americas .

[535] See Industrial Revolution - Wikipedia https://en.wikipedia.org/wiki/Industrial_Revolution .

The one European man of Jewish descent, Mr. Karl Marx[536] took an extraordinary sympathy on the employee people that he called proletariat class. The rest is the history of communism[537] and socialism[538] and labor union movement[539].

C. Historical Enmity

Some Asian countries' citizens retain historical hostility toward Japan, due to historical memory of Japanese colonialization era during late 1800s and mid-1900s.[540] Of course, some Japanese historians take apologist stance to play defense attorneys for their colonial ancestors and argue that the colonization helped the industrialization, modernization, or westernization of the Asian countries that Japan once colonized.

That argument has some merits. For instance, the Japanese empire did indeed build railroads[541] and universities[542] in Korea, and Japanese government even allowed Korean students to study in universities in Japan and then let them go back to Korea.[543] But, it is true that there were some labor exploitation by Japan on colonized countries, including the sad story of sexual slavery during WWII[544].

In America, of course there was the history of slavery.[545] It is not too un-understandable that some pro-ebony-ists argue in favor of reparation.[546] It is not too ununderstandable a cause.[547] Having said that, in the year 2020, today's one dominant ideology of BLM-ism, is nothing but the most recent progeny of anti-racism in America, whose predecessor being the civil rights movement of the mid-1900s[548].

Some, definitely not all or not even most, African Americans retain some historical hostility toward Caucasian Americans, due to the historical memory of the slavery era. Then, in parallel to the apologetic Japanese historians, we can explore some possible line of reasoning that might conclude, “there may exist some positive aspects that resulted from American slavery.” For instance, slavery brought Africans to America, who gave birth to the great race of African Americans.[549]

---

[536] See Karl Marx - Wikipedia https://en.wikipedia.org/wiki/Karl_Marx .

[537] See Communism - Wikipedia https://en.wikipedia.org/wiki/Communism .

[538] See Socialism - Wikipedia https://en.wikipedia.org/wiki/Socialism .

[539] See Trade union - Wikipedia https://en.wikipedia.org/wiki/Trade_union .

[540] See Japanese colonial empire - Wikipedia https://en.wikipedia.org/wiki/Japanese_colonial_empire .

[541] See https://en.wikipedia.org/wiki/Seoul_Station#History .

[542] See https://en.wikipedia.org/wiki/Seoul_National_University#History .

[543] See https://en.wikipedia.org/wiki/Yi_Sang ; https://en.wikipedia.org/wiki/Yi_Sang-hwa; https://www.naxos.com/person/Isang_Yun/21621.htm ; Korea under Japanese rule - Wikipedia https://en.wikipedia.org/wiki/Korea_under_Japanese_rule .

[544] See Comfort women - Wikipedia https://en.wikipedia.org/wiki/Comfort_women .

[545] See Slavery in the United States - Wikipedia https://en.wikipedia.org/wiki/Slavery_in_the_United_States .

[546] See Reparations for slavery - Wikipedia https://en.wikipedia.org/wiki/Reparations_for_slavery .

[547] We will closely examine the unsoundness/soundness of the reparation concept later in this paper.

[548] See Civil rights movement - Wikipedia https://en.wikipedia.org/wiki/Civil_rights_movement .

D. Appreciation Point: African American Cultural Contribution[550]

Back in the days when Elvis was the King, America was in great racial harmony.[551] Well, mostly //xD. This Mr. one Elvis, learnt great deal from African Americans. Especially, the Blues tradition.[552] African Americans are nowadays, in this 2020 BLM-dominated era, referred to as “Blacks” with uppercase “B”. But some of us are not quite ready to adopt this supposedly new tradition to refer to them, even in order to ease the typing and spelling.[553]

African Americans have excelled in dancing,[554] music,[555] comedy,[556] and sports[557] among others. When we observe all these highly successful African Americans, it is not easy to be convinced that racism against African Americans still even exist in America at all.

---

[549] See God Turns Curses into Blessings (Nehemiah 13:2) | helloHOPE https://hellohope.com/blog/god-turns-curses-into-blessings-nehemiah-132/ ; Online Bible | Biblica - The International Bible Society https://www.biblica.com/bible/niv/genesis/50/ ; 20 Bible verses about Blessing And Curse (knowing-jesus.com) https://bible.knowing-jesus.com/topics/Blessing-And-Curse . In the book of Genesis, Joseph’s brothers sold Joseph as a slave to Egyptian merchants. Joseph later on became a high governmental official in Egypt and saved his Jewish family from famine. Joseph said to his brothers, “God transformed your curse on me into blessing of our family getting saved from starvation.” See Joseph (Genesis) - Wikipedia https://en.wikipedia.org/wiki/Joseph_(Genesis) . If a survey is conducted and it asks African Americans today, whether they prefer living in America or migrating to Africa, most of them would probably say they want to stay in America. A notable exception was the establishment of Liberia, a nation built by African Americans who migrated from America to Africa. See https://en.wikipedia.org/wiki/Liberia .

[550] See African-American culture - Wikipedia https://en.wikipedia.org/wiki/African-American_culture .

[551] See Elvis Presley - Wikipedia https://en.wikipedia.org/wiki/Elvis_Presley .

[552] See Blues - Wikipedia https://en.wikipedia.org/wiki/Blues .

[553] If BLM-ists want us to capitalize “Black”, while they want us to not capitalize “brown” or “white”, then for the rest of us who are not African Americans, we kind of have feeling that BLM-ism is coming to sound more like a Black Supremacism. Like, uppercase is lowercase, as upper class is to lower class. Would this kind of BLM-ism last very long? Not very likely. Given that African Americans constitute only 13% of all Americans, Black Supremacism is not likely to get popular support from 87% of Americans in long-term basis. It is because some Americans would start to wonder, “What about the rest of us? We ain’t Black, dude.” //xD See https://en.wikipedia.org/wiki/Race_and_ethnicity_in_the_United_States .

[554] See African-American dance - Wikipedia https://en.wikipedia.org/wiki/African-American_dance .

[555] See African-American music - Wikipedia https://en.wikipedia.org/wiki/African-American_music .

[556] See Category:African-American comedians - Wikipedia https://en.wikipedia.org/wiki/Category:African-American_comedians .

[557] See Black players in professional American football - Wikipedia https://en.wikipedia.org/wiki/Black_players_in_professional_American_football ; Category:African-American basketball players - Wikipedia https://en.wikipedia.org/wiki/Category:African-American_basketball_players .

So. What's going on? What happened? What catapulted once-obscure minority advocacy group, BLM, into such an internationally dominant ideology in year 2020?[558]

2. Covid-19 Lockdown: Accumulation of Stress

A. Social Nature of *Homo sapiens*

Some animals like tigers or moose are solitary, while others like elks or lions are social. *Homo sapiens* happens to have evolved to be a social species. When federal and state governments force people to stay at home by law, then such lockdown causes distress in people because loneliness is counter to human nature. If social gathering during Covid-19 is illegal, people will find a way to legally gather, somehow. Why? It's because *Homo sapiens* is an inventive, smart, and opportunistic species.

B. Pain of Boredom

Another big factor is the boredom during the lockdown. When a person is doing nothing at home, all s/his energy gets converted into the pain of boredom. As the Covid lockdown drags on, people's stress of the cabin fever[559] continues to accumulate.

Why does a society punish a criminal by imprisonment? It is because imprisonment, even a house arrest as in Covid lockdown, is a highly stressful and painful experience. And worst yet, people in America were "punished" by house arrest when they did nothing wrong. And Americans are used to freedom and they can't handle mandatory things very well. When things are mandatory, Americans get more distressed than people in other countries, because Americans are so more used to liberty than in other countries.

The year 2020's Covid lockdown was a ticking bomb. It was not a matter of whether or about what, but a matter of when.

---

[558] We do appreciate Korean Nationalists who advocate for Japanese Colonialists' abuse. We appreciate Me-Too-Advocates, BLM-Activists, who fight for justice and who bring attentions to us the wrongful past acts. We admire their devoted passions and activisms. We do. //:-)

[559] See https://www.merriam-webster.com/dictionary/cabin%20fever .

3. Mr. Floyd's Passing: The Ignition

A. About Mr. Floyd[560]

Mr. Floyd seems to have grown up in rough neighborhoods where crimes are common way of living, the street-survival style. Some of us do not fault Mr. Floyd for his long criminal records, because some of us take a more deterministic point of view.[561] Mr. Floyd did not choose his parents or the neighborhood he grew up in. Perhaps the people he met, the events he observed, his childhood environment shaped his personality and lifestyle, some of which is recidivism, or recurrent illegality.

It is reported that Mr. Floyd lost his job as a security guard and needed money to survive. He and his friends counterfeited money and tried to buy things in a supermarket, and the store clerks noticed the fake money and call the police. The police officers tried to arrest them, and Mr. Floyd resisted the arrest, and the police officers used brute force to detain Mr. Floyd. During the arrest, Mr. Floyd passed away. And the whole scene was filmed by passersby in their cellphones, and they published the footages in social media. And the rest is history.

B. The Language of Brute

When some people saw the footage, some of them were shocked. But there might have been some others who were not as shocked as others. War veterans, police officers, or martial artists, may not have been as much shocked and rocked as others who are not used to the language of brute force.

In Japanese martial art of Jujitsu for instance, chocking neck or locking joints are bread and butter of the sparring. In any war, the unfortunate but inevitable situation of collateral damage[562] or collateral casualty[563] occurs. In wars, sadly, innocent people do die. And police officers are at war against crimes, 24/7, 365 days a year, year after year.

Whether the police officers used excessive force or not when they arrested Mr. Floyd is for the jurors to decide in a court of law. But, we can at least try to rationally and objectively analyze the situation.

Some people talk about police brutality.[564] Perhaps there are some valid legal claims in some cases. But, perhaps it may be fair to try to understand the other side of the story, the police story.[565] Would it be too farfetched a theory if one theorizes that, sometimes, police officers want to err on the side of caution by over-using brute force, when they deal with potential criminals, many of whom are known to be brutal?[566]

---

[560] See https://en.wikipedia.org/wiki/George_Floyd .

[561] See https://en.wikipedia.org/wiki/Determinism .

[562] See https://en.wikipedia.org/wiki/Collateral_damage .

[563] See https://en.wikipedia.org/wiki/Shooting_of_Breonna_Taylor .

[564] See https://en.wikipedia.org/wiki/Police_brutality .

[565] See https://en.wikipedia.org/wiki/Police_Academy_%28franchise%29 ; https://m.imdb.com/title/tt0089374/ ; https://en.wikipedia.org/wiki/Y.M.C.A._(song) ; https://en.wikipedia.org/wiki/Village_People ;

C. The Race Factor

In the case of Mr. Floyd, the arresting officer happened to be a Caucasian male, and Mr. Floyd happened to be an African American male. So the BLM activists seized the opportunity and took it out to the street and the rest is history.[567]

Well, it is understandable that BLM took a position favoring African Americans. Activists, advocates of an ideology, they're like lawyers. A lawyer's job is to be biased, to be partial, to be a zealous advocate for the client that s/he represents. Advocates, activists, they take it their mission to advocate on behalf of the group of people they represent.[568] BLM-ists represent the interest and well-beings of African Americans whose family members passed away during police arrest.

And when the arresting officers happen to be Caucasian males, then BLM-ists will most definitely make an argument of racism. How so? Because, just like many lawyers would argue in front of jurors in court of law, activists know how to appeal to emotion of the people.[569] Technically, "appeal to emotion" is a logical fallacy, but in reality, it is a highly effective strategy to win a case, to win people's favor. Why? It's because, perhaps, most people are more emotional than rational. Or, perchance, to make an emotional argument is easier than to make a rational argument.

4. BLM Protests: the Explosion[570]

A. The Phenomenon of Deification[571]

---

https://en.wikipedia.org/wiki/The_Naked_Gun ; https://en.wikipedia.org/wiki/The_Police . Once upon a time in America, not too long ago, there was a time when Americans found police officers endearing.

[566] See https://en.wikipedia.org/wiki/Qualified_immunity . The thing is, police officers are only humans and they cannot always know whether a criminally accused person is dangerous or not, armed or not. Policing is an intense and dangerous and stressful job. Mr. Floyd is a tall, muscular male and perhaps the arresting officers thought Mr. Floyd might pose a great danger to them, judging from Mr. Floyd's tall height and well-built musculature. We can only make rational, educated, logical guesses, as we all are only humans and no one knows what exactly happened. Only God knows. See https://www.openbible.info/topics/god_knows_all .

[567] Original BLM started with a good intention and venerable cause. But Covid-19 changed its characteristic. We may need to distinguish the two kinds of BLM: pre-Covid-BLM and post-Covid-BLM.

[568] See https://vixra.org/abs/2011.0125 .

[569] See https://en.wikipedia.org/wiki/Appeal_to_emotion .

[570] See https://en.wikipedia.org/wiki/George_Floyd_protests ; https://en.wikipedia.org/wiki/Breonna_Taylor_protests .

[571] See https://en.wikipedia.org/wiki/Theosis_(Eastern_Christian_theology) ; https://en.wikipedia.org/wiki/Apotheosis .

When the author read news articles about BLM protests, he noticed a bizarre and eerie similarity of those articles and Christian prayers. A Christian prayer ends with, "In the name of Jesus Christ, Amen." Any BLM protest article ends with, "…the wave of protest started with Mr. George Floyd's death."[572] The similarity between BLM activism and Christian religion does not end there.

When BLM-ists painted the portraits of Mr. Floyd on the walls of buildings without the permission of the building owners, some media personnel called them "murals", as opposed to graffiti or vandalism. Murals or shrines are common features of any religions, including Christianity. Why do activisms and religions have so many similarities? Because they both belong to a bigger category that we call ideologies.[573]

Anyhow. Let us go ahead and compare Mr. Floyd and Mr. Jesus. First of all, they both died untimely deaths and their deaths inspired many people. And they both posthumously became cultural icons and household names, even focal points of religious or religion-like rituals, mostly or partly because of the way that they died.

Mr. Jesus once said, "Truth will free you."[574] During the Covid lockdown,[575] people could not get out, and they could not get together for a long time, like several months. After Mr. Floyd's death, people were able to legally get outside and get together, as BLM protesters. The U.S. Constitution, the very first amendment gives Americans constitutional rights of free speech, free assembly, and petition grievances to the government.[576] In a sense, Mr. Floyd's death freed Americans from Covid lockdowns.

Just like Christians regard Mr. Jesus as their savior, many people in America regarded Mr. Floyd as their savior from the Covid house arrest.[577] People started to elevate Mr. Floyd to a level of some deity, by painting 'murals' of him on walls, by chanting[578] his name again and again[579] in news articles and news TVs and radio shows, just like Christians pay tribute to Mr.

---

[572] See https://www.cnn.com/2020/07/27/us/us-blm-protests/index.html ; https://www.latimes.com/california/story/2020-11-10/rural-california-town-lodi-blm-protests .

[573] See https://vixra.org/abs/2011.0125 .

[574] See https://www.openbible.info/topics/truth_will_set_you_free .

[575] See https://en.wikipedia.org/wiki/COVID-19_pandemic_lockdowns .

[576] See https://www.law.cornell.edu/constitution/first_amendment .

[577] See Post-Covid-BLM protests can be understood as an instance of the phenomenon known as catharsis, the so called "getting yah yah's and hah hah's out", out of the Covid-lockdown boredom. See https://en.wikipedia.org/wiki/Catharsis .

[578] See https://en.wikipedia.org/wiki/Chant .

[579] Mainstream media seems to have taken it as their mission to brainwash people with ideologies like pro-lgbt-ism, blm-ism, climate-change-alarm-ism, covid-19-alarm-ism, hyper-pro-feminism, etc. Mr. George Orwell's dreadful vision seems to have come true, a while ago. Not in 1984, as 1980s were good ole days in America. Then when did America start to decline? Many conservatives suspect it all start to decline starting from 2008 or so. Well, we all have different opinions on things. See https://en.wikipedia.org/wiki/Nineteen_Eighty-Four .

Jesus by saying his name again and again and again.[580] BLM deified Mr. Floyd. No, it's not just BLM. It's the people. People deified Mr. Floyd. Not just Mr. Floyd. They deified Ms. Breonna Taylor as well.

B. Role Model Making

We all regret the passing of Mr. Floyd. But, we do need to examine the social impact of making a role model out of Mr. Floyd. Is it a sound practice, a good idea, to make Mr. Floyd a role model to the minds of the youth? Whether it was a good idea or not, that's what happened.

Again, we are all sorry about the untimely death of Mr. Floyd. Having said that, we cannot ignore the fact that Mr. Floyd had multiple criminal records. And BLM-ists and some media outlets portrayed Mr. Floyd as some kind of saint or some hero, a role model. Then an implicit message might be, that people should look up to him, and do what he did. And that's precisely what happened next.

During BLM protests in big cities in America in the year 2020, there were felony crimes of arsons, burglaries, thefts. There were also misdemeanor crimes of vandalisms and taking down public properties like statues.[581] Having Mr. Floyd as a role model to emulate and imitate, had the consequence of justified, legitimized, socially approved crimes.

To be fair, the negative role model making in America is not confined in the leftist, liberalistic, secular, Democratic Party side. In Christian, rightist, conservativistic, Republican Party side, there is also some negative role model making. Who would it be?

.

..

…

….

---

[580] In all honesty, after all is said and done, this author confesses that he's a practicing Christian. He is like, … half secular half religious; half liberal and half conserve; kinda like half and half for balance's sake. See https://en.wikipedia.org/wiki/Golden_mean_(philosophy) .

[581] See https://en.wikipedia.org/wiki/George_Floyd_protests .

…..

The one Mr. President Trump. Who else? //xD

Like anyone else, President Trump, of course, have goods and bads. Nobody is perfect. But back in 2016 when Mr. Trump got elected for presidency, there were legitimate concerns from the left side of the aisle. Mr. Trump is said to be a sexist, misogynist, racist, bullyistic[582] and a homophobic, transphobic, xenophobic, Islamophobic, if not downright antisemitic.[583] Many people thought that Mr. Trump is disrespectful, dishonest, divisive, belligerent, arrogant, selfish, self-serving, rude, mean, paranoiac, chauvinistic, despotic, dictatorial, nepotistic, cronyistic, and chaotic, wishful-thinking.

They also suspected Mr. Trump suffering from mental illness ranging from delusion of grandeur, delusion of persecution, narcissism, learning disability, bi-polar disorder, megalomania, manic-depressive, obsessive-compulsive, attention deficit disorder, seasonal affect disorder, paranoia, functional schizophrenia, borderline personality disorder, etc. Electing such a man to be the president of the U.S., that did indeed have some consequences. Or it didn't.[584] We don't know. God only knows.[585]

A negative role model making, it leads to misleading people. In general, when a person becomes a celebrity, many people imitate that celebrity. This is why a society should exercise prime caution when it gives a person a publicity, a media exposure and such. Otherwise, the consequence may be one bigly ugly society, like the ones we observed in the year 2020 in many different parts of the world.[586]

---

[582] See https://www.amazon.com/Too-Much-Never-Enough-Dangerous/dp/1982141468 .

[583] See https://en.wikipedia.org/wiki/Donald_Trump .

[584] The enumerated character allegations may be wholly true, partially true, or entirely false.

[585] If we can find similarity between Mr. Floyd and Mr. Jesus, perhaps we can also find some similarity between President Trump and Mr. Jesus as well. Perhaps President Trump took the cross, metaphysically and metaphorically speaking, and took all the sins of ours by becoming the prime target of all the blames and jeers and mockeries that there can be, that one can come up with. When things went wrong with Covid and BLM in the year 2020, many people blamed President Trump for everything that went wrong and decided to fire him from the White House, by voting for Mr. Biden instead in the 2020 November election. Does this resemble the scapegoating of Mr. Jesus, the crucifixion? See https://en.wikipedia.org/wiki/Scapegoat ; https://en.wikipedia.org/wiki/Crucifixion . Some conservative radio talk show hosts expressed similar views in different manners and fashions. Well, perhaps it wasn't too unfair that people booted out Mr. Trump from the White House, because he may have failed to face the extraordinary challenges and solve the unusually difficult problems. After all, perhaps Mr. Trump is not one of the exceptional leaders like Presidents FDR or Lincoln or Washington. Mr. President Trump failed to be reelected in the year 2020, and he is said to be thinking about running again in 2024. Some say he will create his own media news outlet. No matter what capacity, we hope and pray he continues to entertain us all with his amazing showmanship //:-)

[586] The year 2020 was supposed to be a propitious one like, vision 20/20. In many ways it was. After all, the events that happened in this year of 2020 inspired many secular scholars and private academics, including this author, to think things through and start writing about them. There's always silver lining on the edge of thick dark clouds. The author remembers Mr. Trump wrote about that in one of his memoirs that he wrote in 1980s and 1990s, of which the author is a yooge fan. After all, Mr. Trump is an entertaining and inspiring figure to many, including

VII. Solutions: Putting It Altogether

1. On Reparation[587]

A. Introduction to the Concept of Reparation

Let us examine whether the concept of reparation is sound or not. Basically, reparationists' line of reasoning is as follows:

> *Whites exploited Blacks' labor by underpaying them during slavery.*
>
> *That's why Whites became wealthy, Blacks became poor.*
>
> *Such White privilege got inherited to future Whites.*
>
> *Black poverty also got inherited to future Blacks.*
>
> *Thus, it is time to transfer wealth from Whites to Blacks.*

Again, it is not too un-understandable line of logic. So let's look at it closely to see if the ideology of reparation-ism is sound of not.

First, for reparation to work, they will need to identify who are descendants of Black slaves, and who are descendants of White[588] slave owners.[589] Next, they will need to identify which descendants of Black slaves are currently poor, and which descendants of White slave owners are currently wealthy. Then, they will need to take the money of wealthy descendants of White slave owners, and then give it to the poor descendants of Black slaves. Does this really sound alright? If you ask this author, something just sounds unsound. //x-D So let's think about it.

---

editorial cartoonists. See https://www.usatoday.com/picture-gallery/opinion/2019/04/10/editorial-cartoons-on-president-trump/39325683/ ; https://www.usnews.com/cartoons/donald-trump ; https://www.syracuse.com/opinion/2020/11/editorial-cartoons-for-nov-22-2020-trumps-tantrum-covid-thanksgiving.html . This author even voted for Mr. Trump back in November, 2016. //:-o He doesn't regret having voted for him, as he really enjoys editorial cartoons poking fun of him //x-D

[587] See https://en.wikipedia.org/wiki/Reparations_for_slavery .

[588] For the sake of fairness, we will capitalize both "Black" and "White" to refer to African Americans and Caucasian Americans respectively.

[589] Of course, it goes without saying that, in America, not every Whites are 100% descendants of slave owners, and not every Blacks are 100% descendants of slaves. Most likely, most Americans have mixed ancestry.

B. Money, Money, Money: Another Look at Communism

Long time ago in Europe, the one Mr. Karl Marx[590] came up with the idea of communism,[591] which basically advocates for communal property, as opposed to private property[592]. The human history of past century taught us that communism and socialism have generally failed. The redistribution of wealth, the regime of "Tax the Rich, Feed the Poor", is not quite appealing a concept to many, especially to ones who became rich by hard work and diligence.

Mr. Marx subscribed to materialism,[593] which basically says human being is nothing but a complex machinery and thus materials like food and drink, eventually money, is what makes a person happy. Does that sound right? Hmm.

If we look at all the countries who subscribed to communism,[594] we can tell that elitism exists in those countries. In other words, Mr. Marx's vision of income equality never once got realized, materialized, manifested in reality on this planet earth. Why?

…..

….

…

..

.

---

[590] See https://en.wikipedia.org/wiki/Karl_Marx .
[591] See https://en.wikipedia.org/wiki/Communism .
[592] See https://en.wikipedia.org/wiki/Private_property .
[593] See https://en.wikipedia.org/wiki/Materialism .
[594] See https://en.wikipedia.org/wiki/Communist_state#List_of_communist_states .

Well, actually we already examined the issue in previous paper,[595] so we'll be a brief review here.

In the natural world of animals and plants, there is this triangular hierarchy known as ecological pyramid.[596] In human world, it works the same. Whether a country adopts communism or capitalism, socialism or democracy or dictatorship, the country ends up having triangular hierarchy at some point down the road. It is because triangular hierarchy is the equilibrium point, a law of nature. Why? We need to think like an economist to understand the law of triangular equilibrium.

C. Thinking like an Economist

In a society, some people are diligent, some people are not as diligent. People who are diligent produce goods and services that are in high demand. So they make more money than others, because they went long way to learn difficult job skill training and education. Since a certain job skill set requires long and arduous training, not everyone wants to learn those job skills. Thus, the supply of people with highly trained job skill is small. Smaller supply raises the price of such services. They get to make more money per hour.

There are jobs that require less training and education. In such labor market, there are more supply of people who can do the job and such ample supply of labor decreases the price level of the labor.

In a communist country, who became the leaders? Most likely people who work harder and smarter, or descendants of such people. Mr. Marx's communist ideal can only exist in some people's brains or books, but not in the real world.

Of course, communal property concept does exist, even in America. Big pool of money like pension fund, insurance fund, bank's fund, government's fund, they're all communal properties that people all contribute to, and people all use altogether. So perhaps Mr. Marx wasn't entirely wrong.

D. Tracing Ancestry

Let's come up with an illustrative hypothetical. Let's say, A1 was a White slave owner who got wealthy by exploiting Black slaves' labor. Then, A1 had a child, A2, who inherited A1's wealth. A2 did not work and lived off of the inheritance money. When A2 passed away, A2 got no money left to bequeath to his child, A3. So A3 had to start from zero, and A3, unlike his father A2, learnt the value of hard work out of necessity. A3 applied industry and became a self-made man. So, the question is, should A3 give his money to B3, a descendant of a Black slave, just because A3 had a slave owner as his ancestor?

---

[595] See https://vixra.org/abs/2011.0125 .

[596] See https://byjus.com/biology/different-types-ecological-pyramids/ .

For the sake of argument, let's assume reparationists somehow manage to do extensive and expansive and expensive work of ancestry tracing to identify all the wealthy descendants of White slave owners who truly are wealthy because of the labor exploitation of Black slaves. And let's assume they managed to take their money and put the money in the bank. Will the money get distributed to poor descendants of Black slaves? Well, they will have to another set of expensive ancestry research to identify who are true poor descendants of Black slaves.

Let's say, B1 was a black slave. B1 got freed after the civil war, after emancipation. B1 had to start a new life, start all over from scratch. B1 exercised his diligence and became a self-made man. B1 had a son, B2, and B2 inherited B1's big money. B2 lived off of inheritance money and when B2 passed away, his son, B3, got nothing to inherit from. So, in this case, the question is, should B3 get the reparation fund money? Would it be fair to transfer A3's money to B3?

As you can see, the concept of reparation oversimplifies the situation. Most likely, it doesn't seem to be the case that reparation policy would work.[597]

E. On Labor Exploitation

We are examining whether the concept of reparation is sound or not. Reparationists' position is that African Americans were underpaid for their labor during the slavery era, and thus their descendants need to be paid back from the descendants of slave owners. Let us examine this argument again, from a different angle.

Even today in America of the year 2020, there are minimum wage earners.[598] As a minimum wage earner, one may able to provide oneself with food, shelter, clothing, and transportation. Back in the days, anywhere in the world, bonded servants existed and they can be thought as today's equivalent of minimum wage earners. Then can we say, even today, the employers are exploiting the labor of minimum wage earners by underpaying them? Some liberalists do think so, especially Democratic Party members who subscribe to communism or socialism.[599] Then should there be reparation for the descendants of minimum wage earners as well, regardless of their races? As we can see, things get really complex really quick with reparationism.

---

[597] Former President Obama said investment on education for African Americans is a better idea than reparation of taking money from Whites and giving it to Blacks. See http://archive.boston.com/news/politics/2008/articles/2008/08/03/obama_rejects_offering_slavery_reparations/ ; https://historynewsnetwork.org/article/164713 . Mr. Obama's line of reasoning has the same idea as affirmative action plan. See https://en.wikipedia.org/wiki/Affirmative_action . There is also an old maxim in western or eastern tradition: "Give a man a fish and you feed him for a day; Teach a man to fish and you feed him for a lifetime." See https://en.wiktionary.org/wiki/give_a_man_a_fish_and_you_feed_him_for_a_day;_teach_a_man_to_fish_and_you_feed_him_for_a_lifetime ; https://quoteinvestigator.com/2015/08/28/fish/ ; https://www.phrases.org.uk/meanings/give-a-man-a-fish.html .

[598] See https://www.dol.gov/agencies/whd/minimum-wage/state .

F. On Hardship of Slavery

The history of African Americans records that there were cruel and inhumane treatment[600] by plantation owners upon bonded servants,[601] and there was hardship of being transported in a crowded ship that transported Africans from Africa to America.[602] Those are sad histories of America and they should not be re-written. But, it would be also incorrect to over-generalize those accounts of history.

We do not have a time machine and it will never built, in the author's opinion.[603] We can only take an educated guess about what it was like in America back in 1700s by making retrospective extrapolation based on the present, or looking at historical accounts of the past era. Some classical American literature portray that some, if not most, relationships between plantation owners and bonded servants were amicable and friendly.[604]

American history reports that many of America's founding fathers were slave owners.[605] Is it likely that most of those slave-owning founding fathers were cruel and inhumane when they dealt with their bonded servants? That could have been the case, but from commonsensical point of view, the possibility seems to have a rather lower probability.

Let us look at the world. How many people are bad, and how many people are good, in terms of percentage?

…..

---

[599] See https://en.wikipedia.org/wiki/Bernie_Sanders .

[600] See https://en.wikipedia.org/wiki/Treatment_of_the_enslaved_in_the_United_States .

[601] The author rather avoid using the term, 'slave,' because it is a highly disrespectful term in referring to the ancestors of our African American comrade citizens of America. We rather would characterize them as servant leaders. See https://www.investopedia.com/terms/s/servant-leadership.asp ; https://en.wikipedia.org/wiki/Servant_leadership ; https://biblehub.com/mark/9-35.htm ; https://www.kingjamesbibleonline.org/Matthew-19-30/ .

[602] See https://en.wikipedia.org/wiki/Slave_ship .

[603] See https://vixra.org/abs/2009.0211 .

[604] See https://en.wikipedia.org/wiki/Uncle_Tom%27s_Cabin ; https://en.wikipedia.org/wiki/Gone_with_the_Wind_(novel) .

[605] See https://www.revolutionary-war.net/slavery-and-the-founding-fathers/ .

….

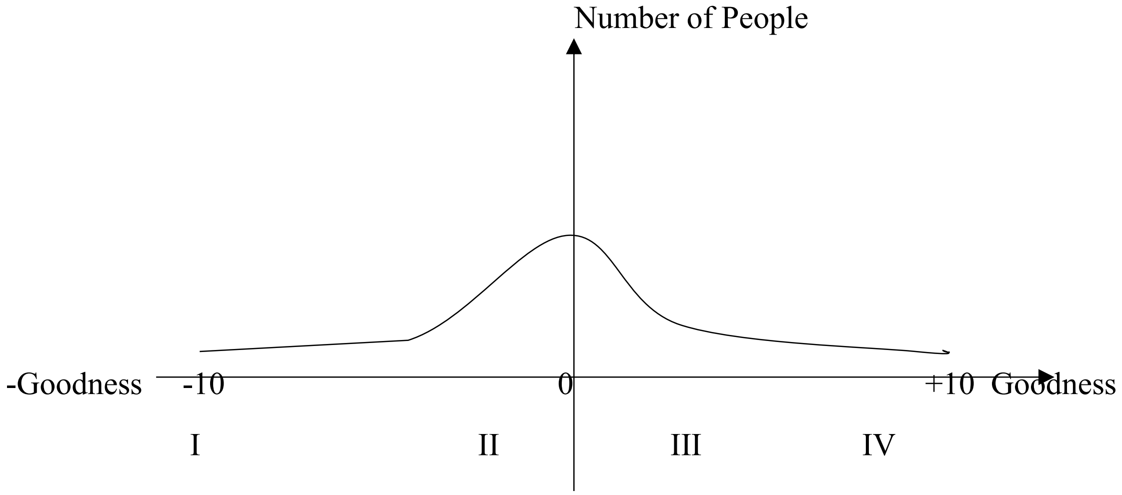
…

..

.

Of course, probably binary model of good/bad would not be the best tool for mathematically modeling the goodness of people. In other words, it's not like black or white.[606] In the world, there are criminals there are saints, and there people in between.

So probably a bell curve, also known as normal distribution or Gauss distribution, would be a better model. Let's go ahead and plot it:



Please forgive the crudeness of the diagram //x-D Basically, what we have above is the distribution of people in four categories. I: very bad people; II: bad people; III: good people; IV: very good people.

How can we represent a person's goodness with a single number? It is easy. Let's say, a person's goodness have three criteria: knowledge, civility, beauty. We can assign a number ranging from -10 to +10[607] for each criterion when we evaluate a person, and we can average the three numbers. Let's say Adam's score is (-7, +8, +5), because he is very ignorant, but very nice, and decent-looking guy, then Adam's goodness score is (-7 +8 +5)/3, which is +2. In this case, one Mr. Adam is a slightly good guy.

---

[606] This time, no pun intended //:-)

In this paper, we are exploring a very controversial possibility that there might have been some benign plantation servant owners in 1700s' America, just like there were some seriously malignant plantation owners who abused their bonded servant. That theory is based upon the premise that the distribution of goodness in people in any era follows the normal distribution pattern as illustrated above. The premise is not an unrealistic one, given that things in nature tend to be symmetric. If there are bad people, there're good people too. The nature, even in human world, seems to maintain the equilibrium of balance.

And such conjecture of symmetry of goodness is not confined in the racial history of America. Back in the history of Korea until early 1900s, the class hierarchy was fixed like how it used to be in anywhere in the world. Some people were born as servants and such lower class status was inherited.[608]

The word for servant in Korean is hah-in.[609] The Korean word for a noble class man is yahng-bahn.[610] But in many Korean traditional folklores,[611] the relationships between two classes of pre-modern Korean Asians were described as amicable and mostly respectful ones.

Perhaps reparationists have reasons to portray the past American master-servant relationships as 100% inhumane and 100% cruel and 100% malignant. We understand such position because reparationists are advocates and thus they're biased in favor of the group of people they represent. But, as stewards of truth and history and true knowledge, we have to be unbiased and neutral when we think about American history, even if such position may not be politically correct or popular in this day and age of the year 2020, when BLM-ism is one of the most prevalent ideologies.

2. On Immigration[612]

In this generation around the year 2020, the general, majoritarian direction of immigration occurs from ethnic countries to Caucasian-majority countries.[613] Two notable exceptions are UAE and Saudi Arabia, which are the only two countries on the top 10 list of countries with the highest number of annual immigrants.[614] From this statistics alone, we can tell that immigration might be about better security, meaning, more money and political stability. But mostly these days, immigration happens from ethnic countries to Caucasian countries, as Caucasian countries tend to have more money, more freedom, more political stability, and more technological advances. Let us see why this is the case.

---

[607] We've using this technique, methodology a lot in previous papers and this paper. Let's give it a name. How about, "score window method"? //!-)

[608] See https://ancientkoreacivilization.weebly.com/social-classes.html .

[609] See https://www.wordhippo.com/what-is/the/korean-word-for-0cddeb8892ad43cdf4cabd806d9907cb1aaed3a9.html .

[610] See https://en.wikipedia.org/wiki/Yangban ; https://en.wikipedia.org/wiki/Seonbi .

[611] See https://en.wikipedia.org/wiki/Korean_folklore .

[612] See http://metrocosm.com/global-immigration-map/ ; https://www.migrationpolicy.org/programs/data-hub/maps-immigrants-and-emigrants-around-world .

[613] See https://www.therichest.com/most-popular/10-most-popular-countries-for-immigration/ .

A. Western History in a Nutshell

Caucasians were not always the wealthiest race in human history. Before European Caucasians invaded Roman empire around 300 AD, non-White people dominated the civilization.[615] Well, Caucasian Europeans, after they invaded Roman empire, it took them about 1000 years to catch up with advanced civilization of the north Africa and the middle East.[616]

After Renaissance, [617] the age of reason and enlightenment,[618] followed by industrial revolution,[619] European Caucasians became the most powerful race on earth. To get there, however, Caucasians learned from the civilizations developed by ethnics in north Africa,[620] Israel,[621] Egypt,[622] Greece,[623] Roman empire[624], Middle East,[625] and even India[626] and Asia[627].

Once Caucasians learned from all the ethnic civilizations, they started to excel[628] other races in terms of science and engineering, music, architecture, fine arts, etc. The duration of 1000 years during which Caucasians were learning from ethnic civilizations is what's known as the Dark Age, or the Middle Age.[629] Why was it called a ‘dark age’? It is because the Greco-Roman empire was regarded as the light in the West, before Caucasians came to extinguish that light, when they came to invade and steal around 300 AD.

---

[614] See https://www.immigrantspirit.com/top-ten-most-popular-immigration-countries/ .

[615] See https://en.wikipedia.org/wiki/Fall_of_the_Western_Roman_Empire ; https://en.wikipedia.org/wiki/History_of_China ; https://en.wikipedia.org/wiki/Aztecs#Central_Mexico_in_the_classic_and_postclassic ; https://en.wikipedia.org/wiki/Maya_civilization#Classic_period_(c._250%E2%80%93900_AD) .

[616] See https://en.wikipedia.org/wiki/Middle_Ages .

[617] See https://en.wikipedia.org/wiki/Renaissance .

[618] See https://en.wikipedia.org/wiki/Age_of_Enlightenment .

[619] See https://en.wikipedia.org/wiki/Industrial_Revolution .

[620] See https://en.wikipedia.org/wiki/North_Africa_during_Antiquity .

[621] See https://en.wikipedia.org/wiki/History_of_ancient_Israel_and_Judah .

[622] See https://en.wikipedia.org/wiki/Ancient_Egypt .

[623] See https://en.wikipedia.org/wiki/Ancient_Greece ; https://en.wikipedia.org/wiki/Greek_Empire .

[624] See https://en.wikipedia.org/wiki/History_of_the_Roman_Empire . Here, we are regarding ancient Greeks and Romans as Middle Easterners, as their skin and hair color was mostly brown.

[625] See https://en.wikipedia.org/wiki/Middle_East#History .

[626] See https://detechter.com/these-8-western-philosophers-were-influenced-by-hinduism/ ; https://en.wikipedia.org/wiki/Nietzsche_and_Asian_Thought .

[627] See https://en.wikipedia.org/wiki/Gunpowder . Gunpowder was invented in 800s AD in China, and spread to Europe by 1200s AD.

[628] By 'excel', we don't mean superiority in quality, but we mean at least superiority in power and quantity. We will not be too politically correct in this paper, because too much attention to political correctness will slow us down and result in inefficiency.

So. Caucasians came to Roman empire ran by brown people around 300 AD. Then they lived off of the Roman empire’s accumulated wealth until 500 AD. They ran out of food. So it was time to learn and study and make food themselves. From 500 AD to 1500 AD, during that middle period, Caucasians learned from the civilizations developed by the brown people in the middle east and north Africa. That was achieved by crusades, when Christian soldiers in Europe invaded middle easter countries and took with them to Europe, books and many civilized things.

And Christian monks and other Europeans started studying those ancient texts from Egypt, Greece, Roman empire, middle east, and they recreated or resurrected the Greco-Roman civilization, which is now known as the period of Renaissance that began around 1300 AD. Caucasian race came to destroy brown middle eastern people’s Greco-Roman empire in 300 AD. About 1000 years later, their Caucasian descendants learned from the brown middle eastern civilization that their Caucasian ancestors came to destroy, and resurrected the once-destroyed Greco-Roman civilization and called it Renaissance.

Before such Renaissance, tall buildings like pyramids in Egypt or Maya were not found in northern Europe, because Caucasians did not know advanced science and engineering. Renaissance can be understood as Caucasians repenting for their ancestor’s invasion of the Middle East, and then learning from the Middle East. After such generational repentance, Caucasian race exceeded other races in science and technology.

But before Caucasians came to invade Greco-Roman empire, there were mostly nomadic, basically hunters and gathers.[630] Building a tall structure like pyramid require advanced science and engineering and those advanced knowledges that Caucasians, i.e., northern European race with white skin, they learned how to do so only from brown and black people in the middle east and north Africa.[631]

The moral of the story is that, in history in its entirety, Caucasians have not always been the most powerful and advanced race in terms of science, technology, engineering, and civilization, nor have they always taken the center stage in the world’s attention. They’re just the latest ones who achieved it. The point is, Caucasian race has been dominance in human history only for the past 500 years or so. Before that, ethnics were in the center stage of advanced civilization, like science, math, engineering, arts, architecture, literature, civilization, etc. In other words, in all other periods leading up to 1500 AD, ethnics have been more advanced in civilization than Caucasians.

---

[629] See https://en.wikipedia.org/wiki/Dark_Ages_(historiography) ; https://en.wikipedia.org/wiki/Middle_Ages .

[630] See https://en.wikipedia.org/wiki/Goths ; https://en.wikipedia.org/wiki/Huns .

[631] The author apologize for not a very well structured account of western history //:-) Summarizing thousands of years of western history in a couple of pages is rather difficult a task. Plus, we’re experiencing scope creeping here too lol. See https://en.wikipedia.org/wiki/Scope_creep .

B. Caucasian Civilization

So, we have found that European Caucasians learned the more advanced civilizations developed by brown or black people in north Africa, Middle East, or Asia, for 1000 years during 500 AD to 1500 AD. After that learning, Caucasians excelled and exceeded other races' civilizations in terms of science and engineering. And with their advanced weaponry and long distance navigation technologies, Caucasian Europeans started to go to different continents and colonize those places like Asia, Australia, Africa, and Americas.[632] That next 400 years from 1500 AD to 1900 AD, roughly, is the period when Caucasians used their advanced knowledge and colonization, and became wealthier and more powerful than other race people. That's roughly the western history of the past 500 years or so, except the past 100 years where Caucasian colonization gradually came to a halt.[633]

During European colonization era, there were exploitation of natural resources and human labors from non-Caucasian race people. But, European Caucasians also established modernized countries wherever they went. Since European Caucasians inherited advanced knowledge and capital from their ancestors, they were able to build roads and buildings and farmland in their new homes outside Europe. U.S.A. is just one of those new land that European Caucasians migrated to.[634]

C. Directions of World Immigrations

So back in the days between 1500 AD to 1900 AD, European Caucasians migrated from Europe to Canada or America for religious freedom[635] or to develop business or out of adventurism. Before Caucasian migration to Americas, north and south American continents were first occupied by Asians.[636] These native Americans came from Asia during the ice age when sea level was low, and now-Aleutian-chain-islands formed a land bridge between Asia and now-Alaska, over the Bering Sea, about 16,000 years ago.[637]

So, the Asians came to Alaska, then to now-Canada, now-America, then further down south to now-South-America. Native Americans from ancient Asia, they were the first human settlers in Americas.

---

[632] See https://en.wikipedia.org/wiki/Analysis_of_Western_European_colonialism_and_colonization .
[633] See https://en.wikipedia.org/wiki/Decolonization ; https://en.wikipedia.org/wiki/History_of_colonialism .
[634] See https://en.wikipedia.org/wiki/New_World .
[635] See https://en.wikipedia.org/wiki/Reformation .
[636] See https://en.wikipedia.org/wiki/Native_Americans_in_the_United_States ; https://en.wikipedia.org/wiki/Indigenous_peoples_of_the_Americas .
[637] See https://en.wikipedia.org/wiki/History_of_Alaska .

But since WWII, since about 1950s, the direction of world immigrations changed. Most immigrations were from ethnic countries to now-Caucasian countries, as we examined previously in this paper.[638]

D. Brief History of Science,[639] Mathematics,[640] and Engineering[641]

Originally, western mathematics and science and engineering were developed by middle easterners like Arabs, Egyptians, Greeks, Romans, and Indians. We're talking about algebra by Arabs,[642] Arabic numbers,[643] the discovery of zero by Indians,[644] geometry by Greeks,[645] and pyramid engineering by Egyptians, north Africans.[646] Those were ancient development of western science and technology before 500 AD, roughly.

We examined that the Middle Age, or Dark Age between roughly 500 AD to 1500 AD was the period where European Caucasians were catching up with, learning from, the civilizations of the brown people in the Middle East and north Africa, southern Europe and India and Asia. But after they caught up with brown people in scientific knowledge, they didn't stop. European Caucasians' momentum[647] of learning past science carried forward to invent and develop new sciences, beginning from about 1500 AD. And the science continued to grow in Europe for past 500 years, and then in America for past 200 years. Caucasians in Europe and Americas got wealthy off of modern science and engineering that they learned from brown people and then further developed themselves.[648]

---

[638] See https://en.wikipedia.org/wiki/Immigration_to_the_United_States ; https://en.wikipedia.org/wiki/History_of_immigration_to_the_United_States .

[639] See https://simple.wikipedia.org/wiki/History_of_science .

[640] See https://en.wikipedia.org/wiki/History_of_mathematics .

[641] See https://en.wikipedia.org/wiki/History_of_science_and_technology ; https://en.wikipedia.org/wiki/History_of_engineering .

[642] See https://en.wikipedia.org/wiki/History_of_algebra .

[643] See https://en.wikipedia.org/wiki/Arabic_numerals .

[644] See https://en.wikipedia.org/wiki/0 .

[645] See https://en.wikipedia.org/wiki/History_of_geometry .

[646] See https://en.wikipedia.org/wiki/Pyramid ; https://en.wikipedia.org/wiki/Egyptian_pyramids . Back in the days, Egyptians enslaved Jews. Possibly, Egyptians exploited the labor of Jewish slaves to build pyramids. See https://en.wikipedia.org/wiki/Slavery_in_ancient_Egypt ; https://en.wikipedia.org/wiki/History_of_the_Jews_in_Egypt . Then should today's Egypt make reparation to modern Israelites for the past ancestral sins and debts? According to bible of Judeo-Christianity, it is wrong to punish children for their parents' sins. See https://bible.knowing-jesus.com/topics/Parents-Sin .

[647] So European Caucasians used to be neophytes, newbies, newcomers in math and science. But once they learnt them, they didn't stop there. Their scientific momentum carried forward to invent new maths and sciences in northern Europe. After that, Asians started learning math and science and started excel in those areas. See https://en.wikipedia.org/wiki/Asian_Pacific_Mathematics_Olympiad ; https://en.wikipedia.org/wiki/Asian_Americans_in_science_and_technology . We can observe the ideology of science-ism propagating from Middle-Easterners to Caucasians to Asians.

[648] Again, the accumulation and inheritance of Caucasian wealth is not solely due to exploitation of non-Caucasian labors or colonialization of non-Caucasian lands. Caucasians studied hard, worked hard too. Let's say what needs

The bottom line is, that Caucasians learned and excelled in science and they got wealthy since 1500 AD. That's one of the reasons why some ethnic country people started to migrate to Caucasian countries, to have better job opportunities, make more money, enjoy more freedom, enjoy more ease of life of more technological advances in Caucasian countries.

E. Migration in Europe

As northern Europe became wealthy since 1500 AD, non-Caucasian ethnics from other countries south of northern Europe started to migrate to northern Europe.[649] It was opposite direction than the migration of 500 AD, where northern Europeans migrated to southern Europe of Rome.[650] Basically, around 500 AD, southern Europe was more wealthy and more advanced in technologies, and that's why northern Europeans with white skin migrated to southern Europe of Roman empire.[651] In contrast, since 1500 AD, northern Europe became more wealthy and technologically advanced than southern Europe, and southern people with brown skin[652] started to migrate to northern Europe.[653]

F. On Skin Color

Talking about race can be troublesome, especially this day and age of BLM-ism's prevalence.[654] But, we need to talk about it because we need to understand what race is, in order to solve problems relating to race.[655]

Basically, skin color is determined by the content of melanin in skin.[656] Melanin is like a natural sun-blocker, like shade or sunglasses, in order to block out and protect the skin from

---

to be said and let's be fair and square on all races. Let's not be anti-Caucasian-ists or Caucasio-phobes. In this day and age in America where BLM-ism is a prevalent ideology, Caucasians are being picked on, bullied upon, especially in left-leaning medias. See https://en.wikipedia.org/wiki/White_privilege ; https://en.wikipedia.org/wiki/Karen_(pejorative) .

[649] See https://en.wikipedia.org/wiki/Immigration_to_Europe ; https://en.wikipedia.org/wiki/European_migrant_crisis ;

[650] See https://en.wikipedia.org/wiki/Migration_Period .

[651] See https://en.wikipedia.org/wiki/History_of_human_migration .

[652] Here, we are referring to south Europeans and Indians (gypsies) and Jews and Arabs and north Africans who migrated to northern Europe.

[653] See https://en.wikipedia.org/wiki/European_migrant_crisis ; https://en.wikipedia.org/wiki/History_of_the_Jews_in_Europe ; https://en.wikipedia.org/wiki/African_immigration_to_Europe .

[654] Contemporary BLM-ism seems to take the stance of hyper-pro-ebony-ism, and such Black Supremacy may have some negative impact on the popularity and reputation of African Americans. It is because such Black Supremacism would neglect all other races except "Blacks", estranging the majority of Americans who are some races other than "B"lack. Non-Blacks may object to the notion of using upper letter only when spelling "B"lack race, while using lower case letters when spelling "b"rown or "w"hite races.

[655] See https://en.wikipedia.org/wiki/Race_%28human_categorization%29 .

[656] See https://en.wikipedia.org/wiki/Melanin .

ultraviolet light from the sun. So people in hotter regions near equator line of the globe tend to have darker skin, because there is more sunlight in those regions than regions close to north or south pole on earth.[657]

In the world, probably about 10% of world population is purely white people, and another 10% of the world population is purely black people, and the rest of 80% of world population is brown[658] people.[659]

G. About Color of White[660]

Again, we are about to discuss a topic that might be too controversial in this day and age of BLM-ism's predominance. But, as an American citizen, the author thinks that exercise of constitutional rights is necessary to keep the constitution alive.[661] If every American is afraid to speak freely of their minds, out of fear of the bullyism of mob-protesters and cancel culture of some dominant ideologies like BLM-ism, pro-LGBT-ism, hyper-pro-semit-ism, hyper-pro-femin-ism, hyper-pro-ebony-ism, among others, in the year 2020 of America, that'll be the day constitution dies.[662]

We should be respectful and civil when we talk about sensitive issues like race, but, we should not exercise self-censorship too much. We should take a balance between being careful and being accurate.[663]

Perhaps a hypothetical conversation between two characters in a screenplay format is a more suitable form to discuss this issue, as opposed to a prosaic narrative. Ladies and gentlemen, we introduce to you, one Mr. Asian and one Mr. Black. Enjoy-

---

[657] See https://en.wikipedia.org/wiki/Equator ; https://en.wikipedia.org/wiki/South_Pole ; https://en.wikipedia.org/wiki/North_Pole .

[658] By brown people, we refer to Asians, Indians, Natives, Mixed Races, Middle Easterns, Jews, Hispanics, Pacific Islanders, and so on.

[659] See https://infogram.com/race-of-the-world-population-1go502yg18k62jd ; https://www.peprimer.com/world-population-by-race.html ; https://www.mostfox.com/world-population-by-race/ ; https://www.quora.com/What-is-the-world-population-broken-down-by-race .

[660] See https://en.wikipedia.org/wiki/RGB_color_model ; https://en.wikipedia.org/wiki/CMY_color_model .

[661] See https://en.wikipedia.org/wiki/Constitution_of_the_United_States ; https://en.wikipedia.org/wiki/Constitution .

[662] See https://www.lyrics.com/lyric/29309187/Buddy+Holly/That%27ll+Be+the+Day ; https://www.metrolyrics.com/american-pie-lyrics-don-mclean.html . Isn't America supposed to be the country of freedom, home of the brave, land of the free? See https://www.scoutsongs.com/lyrics/starspangledbanner.html ; https://www.ushistory.org/documents/pledge.htm?vm=r .

[663] See https://en.wikipedia.org/wiki/Golden_mean_(philosophy) . Bible also extensively warns against being far-too-left or veering far-to-right. See https://bible.knowing-jesus.com/topics/Turning-To-Right-And-Left ; https://biblehub.com/deuteronomy/28-14.htm ; https://www.biblegateway.com/verse/en/Deuteronomy%205%3A32 ; https://www.bibletruths.org/do-not-turn-aside-from-lord-left-right/ ; https://www.biblegateway.com/passage/?search=Proverbs+4%3A27&version=NIV .

A: Hello Mr. Black, thank you for your participation to our discussion of race, Sir.

B: What's up, homie?

A: We're talk about race this afternoon, if you don't mind.

B: Shoot.

A: Ahh, well. It's a difficult subject, but

B: Dude, just say it. Ain't gonna shoot you, just say what's in mind.

A: Okay. I think white race is like a white piece of paper. If you write on a white paper with a black pen, it turns black. If you write with a yellow pen, the white paper becomes yellow. If you write with a brown pen, the white paper turns brown. In this sense, I think Caucasian race is the most vulnerable race on earth.

B: What are you saying, homie? You what, a white supremacist?[664] You ain't even white. In fact, you ain't even American. You have no idea what you're talking about. Go back to Asia, Asian man.

A: Well, if you put it that way.

B: You must be KKK-okay[665] and a neo-Nazi[666] and a Hitler sympathizer[667], a conspiracy theorist[668]. Correct? You must be talking about white genocide,[669] am I right?

A: Well, not exactly.

B: Then what exactly?

A: Would you promise me to not punch me or kill me after I answer your question, Mister?

B: It depends.

A: Mister Black, please. Let's stop the pretense.

B: Okay okay. I'm not a murderer. I joke about it sometimes. Ain't gonna kill you, ain't gonna beat you up, not gonna kick your hairy Asiatic as*. Ain't no criminal, man.

A: Good. What I'm saying is, like you said, I'm an Asian adult male.

---

[664] See https://en.wikipedia.org/wiki/White_supremacy .
[665] See https://en.wikipedia.org/wiki/Ku_Klux_Klan .
[666] See https://en.wikipedia.org/wiki/Neo-Nazism .
[667] See https://en.wikipedia.org/wiki/Adolf_Hitler .
[668] See https://en.wikipedia.org/wiki/Conspiracy_theory .
[669] See https://en.wikipedia.org/wiki/White_genocide_conspiracy_theory .

B: Oh yeah. Hello? We all know that.

A: Let's make a hypothetical scenario. Say, I, an Asian adult male, marry a young, slender, fertile, nubile, 21 year-old, model type lady who has white skin, blue eyes, and blonde hair. She and I have a child and what color would that child be?

B: Is it boy or girl?

A: Let's say it's a boy, but that doesn't matter.

B: Of course it does, homie.

A: Answer my question please, Mr. Black.

B: Yo, oh you Asian man, the color of your baby doesn't matter.

A: Whether matters or not, the hypothetical baby will have brown skin, brown eyes, and brown hair just like me. My Caucasian wife's racial heritage just got overwritten by my ethnic gene.

B: You are a white supremacist. You are a WHITE SUPREMACIST! I'm gonna call 911 and they will come arrest you. You're going to jail for this.

A: Mr. Black, Please.

B: Please what?

A: Let's be rational and learn to control our emotional impulses. Can you do that for me?

B: You know what, you keep talking. In a way, you may be crazy but hey, a crazy Asian man's talking can be intellectually tickling, so.

A: I'm not saying Mixed Race kids are not as beautiful than purely Caucasian kids. Some of the most beautiful women I've seen are Mixed Races.

B: How about Black women?

A: Some of the most beautiful women I've seen are African Americans.

B: How about Asian women, Hispanic women, Jewish women, Middle Eastern women Native women?

A: The can be said for all women, okay? I'm not gonna copy and paste the same sentence like, five more times, because that would constitute a waste of my time.

B: How about my time?

A: Well, as intellectual entertainment, that's what I'm offering you, but I do thank you for your time amply, Mr. Black. By the way, you're younger than me.

B: Why does age has anything to do with this?

A: Whatever.

B: Go on, Asian man.

A: So. Me thinks that, me recommends me that a beautiful young slender Caucasian women marry eligible Caucasian males to make purely Caucasian babies with white or pink skin, blue or green eyes, red or blond hair.

B: How about brunette or brown eyed white females?

A: Again, some of the most beautiful women I've seen are Caucasian brunettes.

B: You're a racist.

A: I believe in supremacy of all races. In that sense, I'm a white supremacist, I'm a black supremacist, I'm a brown supremacist.

B: Are you drunk?

A: No Sir, not this time. These days, I don't drink and write.

B: Do you drink and drive?

A: No. Not. An absolute negative, Mr.

B: Good. One question for you, oh you Asiatic male adult.

A: Yes Sir.

B: Why are you so obsessed with white chicks?

A: I never said that.

B: So, according to you, white folks should marry white folks to make white babies, right?

A: In general, yes. There could be some limited exceptions. Every now and then, interracial marriage might prove healthy to the population, because intra-racialism may lead to a situation like incest, which may lead to an increase of genetic diseases among Caucasian population.

B: How about a white man marrying a Black girl?

A: Well, a Caucasian male marrying a non-Caucasian female, that's rare and that's one of the reasons why I'm not concerned about such gender-race combination.

B: What are some other reasons, Asiatic man?

A: I think, it's like farming. Like, pedigree, purebred concept. If I'm a farmer of Caucasian people, I'd need not that many Caucasian males. But I'd need a lot of Caucasian females.

B: A farmer of Caucasian human beings?

A: It's an analogy, so you better bear it with me.

B: Or else, what? You gonna fight me?

A: No, Mr. Black, please.

B: Go on.

A: So. Let's say I'm a breeder of Caucasian race. I need just one healthy Caucasian male. Then I'll need like, 100 Caucasian females. The Caucasian race can still survive.

B: Because a male can impregnate many females?

A: Bingo.

B: Like in animal world?

A: Yes. Yes!

B: So you're treating Caucasians as if they're animals?

A: No. In some obscure Korean aboriginal religion, people call each other 'Hah-Neul-Nim', which means, Mr. Heaven, or God. It's a refreshing concept, isn't it? People treating each other as if they're all gods?

B: So what you're saying is, we should resurrect polygamy in Caucasian population, so that one white man can marry many female white women?

A: No, lol.

B: Then what?

A: Beautiful young slender nubile nuptial fertile Caucasian females should be protected and ethnic men should not marry them, but should leave them to eligible Caucasian males. That's what I'm saying.

B: Still not sure why you're so obsessed with white girls.

A: All I'm saying is, only Caucasian race has traits like honey golden blonde hair, sky blue eyes, emerald green eyes, oh red flame burning auburn hair, strawberry pink skin, etc. No other race has that. That's why ethnic males come migrate to white countries to meet and mate those exotic Caucasian girls. When they do, none of their kids will be white. And that's sad. I'm concerned about extinction of Caucasian race.

B: Hmm.

A: We want Dalmatians to be Dalmatians, chihuahuas to be chihuahuas, etc. I don't think it's within anyone's interest to see that blond hair in Caucasian race go extinct. Let's be honest, okay? I'm not white, you ain't white. But, when we see white people, like Marilyn Monroe, or James Dean[670], they're extremely beautiful people. Don't you agree?

B: I see what you're saying, where you're going with all this. But Marilyn Monroe was brunette. Her studio executives had her hair bleached to platinum blonde.[671]

---

[670] See https://en.wikipedia.org/wiki/James_Dean .

[671] See https://en.wikipedia.org/wiki/Marilyn_Monroe .

A: … Whatever. Hair dying or bleaching, it's not the same as natural hair color.

B: So finish your fictitious fantasy about the Caucasian farming business of yours.

A: No polygamy necessary. A good Caucasian male can marry one Caucasian female, after he divorce another Caucasian female, after he dated yet another Caucasian female. Just one at a time.

B: You mean like, Donald J. Trump did?

A: Sure. He got the money, so.

B: You advocate for sexual immorality?

A: No.

B: Then what?

A: I advocate for preservation and conservation of Caucasian race, because it's a beautiful race, a vulnerable race, and possibly more and more so, an endangered subspecies.

B: Wow.

A: ?? Why so surprised?

B: I didn't know till this very day, an Asian man can be more racist that white people.

A: I don't understand why you would be so offended when I say Caucasian race needs to be preserved and protected. I never said anything negative about Black race, did I? Then why do you find Caucasian protectionism so offensive? I mean, you don't hate White people, do you?

B: Why did you capitalize W in "W"hite?

A: Well, you guys capitalize B in "B"lack, so. I just wanna be fair.

B: You Asian man.

A: Amen.

B: I think, you have a lot to learn, Asian man. But I say this. It feels so good and is a rewarding experience, to do a charitable act, by donating my precious time listening to a pathetic maniac like you.

A: Oh, Mr., I'll take it as a compliment, Sir.

B: Good bye, Asian man.

A: Godspeed, Mr. Black.

//xD

H. On Dollar Value of American Citizenship

Reparationists argue that Caucasian Americans owe African Americans for past labor exploitation and past racial discrimination. Well, the thing is, as pointed out before, if we ask today's African American reparationists/BLM-ists, whether they prefer living in America or migrating to Africa, most of them probably will say they prefer American life.

Let us conduct an economic thought experiment. Hypothetically, let's assume that American citizenship is up for sale. Meaning, suppose that American government starts to sell a limited number of American citizenships to highest bidders in an auction every year to foreign nationals with money. If a foreign national has no money to pay for the citizenship, then American government offers a future pay plan with some interest rate.

One more notable thing about American citizenship as a 'product' with a 'price', is that American citizenship is an inheritable asset. Once a foreign national becomes an American citizen, s/his child will inherit the American citizenship for free. Let's put a random price tag to one American citizenship, say, $10,000. And let's say, there are one million African Americans who are descendants of African Americans whose labor was exploited unfairly in the past. Because all the 1 million African American descendants have American citizenship by birth, the total value of their citizenships is ten billion dollars ($10,000 time 1 million).

In other words, some African Americans freely inherited American citizenship from their ancestors who involuntarily came to America in slave ships. But, the African American descendants prefer being in America than in Africa, probably because of technological advances and ease of life and more job opportunity, political stability in America. So in a sense, reparational already happened, in terms of African Americans' inherited American citizenships, which have considerable dollar values as we saw above.

VIII. Looking Forward, Looking Ahead

1. On Prevention Death during Arrest

We examined previously that police business is a war against crimes and any war unavoidably involves collateral casualty and collateral damage. Since some criminals are brutal, police officers have no choice but using brute force.[672] Otherwise, police officers cannot be effective in protecting law-abiding, peace-loving, hardworking citizens.

---

[672] See https://biblereasons.com/eye-for-an-eye/ ;

But, human life is infinitely valuable.[673] We do want to minimize deaths during police arrest. What if big organizations good at electronics like Tesla[674] or General Motors[675] or NASA[676] invest and invent a gun with electric bullets, as opposed to try some futile and unnecessary projects like colonization of Mars[677] or electric cars[678]?

Political leaders tend think of problem-solving in terms of more money[679], or less funding[680], or legislation[681]. But sometimes, technological innovation, or encouragement thereof, is a superior solution to some problems.

Let's design this non-lethal weapon, at least in theory. Say, there is this gun[682] with a magazine[683] that hold 15 bullets[684] or cartridges[685]. Instead of a metal tip and fire powder, what if this bullet is electric, so that it would induce a temporary total disability of a criminally accused person with an intense but nonlethal electric shock?

There are many possibilities. It could be something like a paintball gun.[686] Inside the paintball, what if we fill the ball with positively charged ions in one compartment, and then negatively charged ions in the other compartment, as the two compartments are separated by non-conducting layer?

2. On Crime Prevention

There are some good things that came out of post-Covid-BLM-ism. BLM-ism brought attention to us, the U.S., that there is a problem of arrest-related deaths and that there is a problems of inherited poverty and inherited criminal-ism. We solved some of them already in this paper, so let's continue solving the problems.[687]

---

[673] See https://www.christianquotes.info/top-quotes/top-11-bible-verses-about-being-created-in-gods-image/ .
[674] See https://en.wikipedia.org/wiki/Tesla,_Inc. .
[675] See https://en.wikipedia.org/wiki/General_Motors .
[676] See https://en.wikipedia.org/wiki/NASA .
[677] See https://en.wikipedia.org/wiki/Colonization_of_Mars .
[678] See https://en.wikipedia.org/wiki/Electric_car .
[679] See https://en.wikipedia.org/wiki/CARES_Act .
[680] See https://en.wikipedia.org/wiki/Defund_the_police .
[681] See https://en.wikipedia.org/wiki/Police_reform_in_the_United_States .
[682] See https://en.wikipedia.org/wiki/Gun .
[683] See https://en.wikipedia.org/wiki/Magazine_%28firearms%29 .
[684] See https://en.wikipedia.org/wiki/Bullet .
[685] See https://en.wikipedia.org/wiki/Cartridge .
[686] See https://en.wikipedia.org/wiki/Paintball_marker .
[687] Perhaps God created problems so we solve them. God can be thought as a boss to humanity, who wants to keep employees occupied with problem-solving, because idle hands become devil's playground. Post-Covid-BLM protests where people burn down things can be understood of idle hands becoming devil's playground, as people got bored at homes during Covid-lockdowns and came out to break things down, to ease their boredoms. Their anti-racism rhetoric might have been a ruse, a pretext.

A. U.S. Military as Domestic Peace Corps

What if we use U.S. Military personnel as mentors or missionaries in poverty-stricken and crime-ridden neighborhoods, known as ghettos or inner cities? When there are no foreign wars going on, military personnel are stationed in U.S. bases and they have ample free time, or down time, during their service hours of Mon-Fri, 8am-5pm. Probably it's a good idea to give active-duty military personnel some rewarding, worthwhile jobs to do, other than engaging them with repetitious military classes and trainings and inventory checking, etc.

Let's design this military-mentorship program. We train soldiers in five branches of U.S. military[688] with martial arts so they can learn to kick, punch, and twist joints, in order to empower them with non-lethal martial art skill set.

Then soldiers go visit troubled neighborhoods, in coordination with local police officers, because police officers know all about those neighborhoods. Soldiers start cleaning up public streets in those neighborhoods and invite the residents there to come join cleaning up the streets. Soldiers befriend them and offer them to practice exercise together, like pushups, situps, pullups, and 2-mile runs.

Soldiers who know math, science, foreign languages, dance, music, can offer them to teach those knowledge to the kids and teens in those neighborhoods. This way, we can engage American soldiers to do positive, constructive activities that may one day eliminate crimes from America for good. This program will help soldiers too, because when soldiers are bored, some soldiers' idle hands become devil's playground too.[689]

American taxpayers are paying active duty soldiers' salaries, so it makes sense that soldiers work for Americans' safety and wellbeing, even during peace time where there is no war outside America.

Furthermore, when there are big wildfires[690], active duty soldiers can help put out the fire too. Perhaps military contractors with advanced weapon technologies can invest and invent missiles loaded with fire hydrants. If we use military jets and helicopters and equipment and active-duty military personnel, even Californian wild fires can be put out in a matter of hours.

B. Lifelong Education: Key to Lifelong Happiness[691]

---

[688] See https://en.wikipedia.org/wiki/United_States_Armed_Forces .

[689] See https://www.defense.gov/Explore/News/Article/Article/1972793/dod-releases-report-on-suicide-among-troops-military-family-members/ ; https://www.stripes.com/news/army/why-is-fort-hood-the-army-s-most-crime-ridden-post-1.642104 .

[690] See https://en.wikipedia.org/wiki/2020_California_wildfires .

[691] See https://www.biblegateway.com/passage/?search=Proverbs+1%3A20-23&version=ESV ; https://bible.knowing-jesus.com/topics/Knowledge .

The author takes a position that education is solution to every problem in the world. Why do some people take legal prescription drugs or illegal drugs, some of them even very wealthy entertainers or heirs of wealthy parents? It may possibly be because they're bored and do not know what to do with the huge amount of time left at hand. Possibly, depression, drug overdose, even suicides are nothing but symptoms of boredom.

When it comes to crimes, some people steal because they did not get the benefit of education that would lead to job security. Some people commit crimes to seek the guilty pleasure, to ease their boredom. Some people depend on charity because they did not get the benefit of education of discipline and diligence. Again, solutions always boil down to education.

In this day and age of internet-powered cellphones, the world of knowledge is at one person's hand. As long as one can pay cellphone bills, one can learn anything and everything good, for free. The corpus of knowledge accumulated over the course of human history is available in the internet.

In farming, there is this concept of crop rotation.[692] The idea is that one rotates the crops so that one mineral in the soil gets replenished before depleted, due to specific nutrient requirement of farming plants, as different plants require different minerals in the soil.

There is this lifestyle called nomadic lifestyle.[693] The idea is, one rotates over different lands so that the farmed animals would not deplete the plants in one given area, to give the lands time to recover the slow growing grasses, which is similar concept to fallowing[694].

So, say, one studies mathematics as a hobby.[695] One may learn some math, then after a while, one can create a brand-new mathematics theoretical framework, type it up, and submit to math journals. If established peer-reviewed journals[696] reject the academic research paper, one can always upload to online academic repositories for free, so people can download it for free too.[697]

Then let's say, one became jaded and fed up with all that math. Then one can learn foreign languages for a while.[698] There are more than enough number of languages in the world that any one person can learn in one's lifetime.[699] If bored again, one may venture into the study of human history, philosophy, religions, fine arts, musical instruments or singing styles, or different branches of science like chemistry, biology, physics, etc.[700]

---

[692] See https://en.wikipedia.org/wiki/Crop_rotation .

[693] See https://en.wikipedia.org/wiki/Nomad .

[694] See https://en.wikipedia.org/wiki/Fallow .

[695] See https://simple.wikipedia.org/wiki/Autodidact ; https://rationalwiki.org/wiki/Autodidact .

[696] See https://en.wikipedia.org/wiki/Peer_review .

[697] See https://en.wikipedia.org/wiki/Open-access_repository ; https://en.wikipedia.org/wiki/Category:Open-access_archives ; https://en.wikipedia.org/wiki/List_of_repositories ; https://en.wikipedia.org/wiki/ViXra .

[698] See https://en.wikipedia.org/wiki/Multilingualism#In_individuals .

[699] See https://www.ethnologue.com/guides/how-many-languages ; https://www.linguisticsociety.org/content/how-many-languages-are-there-world . There are about 7,000 languages in use in the world today.

After that metaphysical round trip around the world of knowledge, one may return to the study of old mathematics and discovery of new mathematics, as by then, it's been a long while since one had studied mathematics and one may have missed doing all that math. And the rotation of education continues like so.

One can learn physical activities too, like learning new solo dancing styles, martial art styles, new exercise routines, etc. This way, people can be happy, healthy, in their whole lives. When that day comes, there shall be no more crimes, no more sorrows. The humanity, finally, shall be saved.

Epilogue[701]

Hello everyone, thank you for your kind and generous readership //:-D We hope you enjoyed the show. Our next article to write and publish will be titled, "New Metaphysics: Didualism and Copiumology" There, we'll introduce some more interesting concepts.[702]

Thank you for your time and see you later, kind and generous ladies and gentlemen //:-)

---

[700] See https://en.wikipedia.org/wiki/Polymath .

[701] This paper was started being written on 11/20/2020. It was finished being written on 12/14/2020 //:-)

[702] See https://en.wikipedia.org/wiki/The_Road_Not_Taken .